



Theo
Research
Oversize

02-0001143

School
of
Theology
Library

THE REV. C. R. MARTIN'S DIARY

INTRODUCTION

In the late spring of 1859, Carl and Mary Martin¹ were assigned to the American Methodist Episcopal Mission in China and they served there during the early 1860s. Carl had graduated from the Concord Biblical Institute on June 9th, 1859, and he and Mary were married in Milton, Vermont, on August 24th of that year. Carl was 24 years old and "Mollie" only 20 when they boarded the "Eureka" in New York Harbor on October 26th, 1859; destination: Foo Chow.

One has only to think of what was going on in the United States at that time to appreciate what these brave and dedicated young people were attempting. The frenzied settlement of the American West would soon be interrupted by the bloody Civil War. The American continent had not yet been spanned by the transcontinental railroad (the "Golden Spike" was driven in 1869). And the Indians and white men were still very much at each other's throats (the Battle of the Little Big Horn did not take place until 1876). Ocean passage between the Orient and California required more than two months of arduous travel in tiny and unpredictable wind-driven ships, and the overland trip from the Green Mountains of Vermont to the west coast of America via train and stagecoach took almost that long, and much longer if one preferred the alternate choice of taking a sailing ship around the tip of South America.

For the voyage to China, however, the Martins went the other way. Sailing eastward from New York – across the Atlantic and around the horn of Africa – the Martins' trip lasted an incredible five months; they did not arrive at Foo Chow until early April, 1860. What must these people have thought as they bid their loving kinfolks farewell and departed for a destination that would take them to the opposite end of the earth? Taking leave of the older relatives and friends must have been especially tearful as the probability of ever seeing them again would have to be reckoned as low.

And China. The inscrutable kingdom! Foreigners were universally distrusted and unwelcome. Individual life came cheaply, and one was in constant danger for one's personal safety. The strange customs, the undecipherable languages and dialects, must have tested the mettle of even the most inspired servants of the Lord.

Carl and Mary had two children, Edward Homer and Lucius Allen. "Eddie" would eventually graduate from Amherst College and the University of Vermont Medical School, marry Ida May Hinckley (of Georgia, Vermont), and become the town doctor in Middlebury, Vermont (and the Middlebury College physician). Dr and Mrs Martin had six children: Edward Homer ("Ned"), Carl Sumner, Harold Hinckley, Mabel, Marjorie, and Mildred. For the record, Mabel Martin married John L. Buttolph, Senior, also of Middlebury, and these two wonderful folks were my paternal Grandparents.

Carl and Mary Martin both left diaries describing their experiences. Carl's begins on November 8th, 1859 (as soon after leaving New York Harbor as his sea sickness would permit) and ends with the entry of June 21st, 1864, in Foo Chow. He details the progress of the voyage with considerable care, including references to latitude and longitude, and the reader will find it interesting to follow along with a globe. Many of the place names mentioned can be found in any atlas today. The bulk of his diary, which is contained in two large volumes, describes their experiences in China.

For a New Years present, 1864, Mary received from "Carlie" a fine gift: a beautifully bound book filled with blank pages, together with the admonition to keep a daily record of her experiences. Her diary thus begins on January 1st, 1864, and ends on May 28th, 1865, following her return voyage across the Pacific Ocean, in San Francisco.

What follows are literal transcriptions of the diaries. I have only added some punctuation marks here and there to make the narrative flow more smoothly to the reader. Where a word is unknown or undecipherable, I have put it in brackets []. Mary's penmanship is always exemplary of the finest Palmer method, and a joy to read. Carl's is sometimes very carefully done and equally clear, but usually it appears to have been written in haste and is very difficult to read. Most of the time the meaning can be accurately inferred through the context, but in the case of proper names, especially the Chinese names, it has been impossible to be accurate and consistent. For example, the reader

¹ *Carlos Roscoe Martin (b. 29 June 1835, Jericho, VT; d. 6 September 1864, Foo Chow)*
Mary Elizabeth Allen Martin (b. 1 February 1839, Milton, VT; d. 13 May 1903, West Berkshire, VT)
 Introduction Page I-1

will notice that there are several spellings of Foo Chow. The various Chinese dialects were very strange to the westerner, and there appears to have been little agreement as to uniform transliteration of Chinese words and names. The lack of agreement actually continues to the present day. (Peking has only recently become Beijing, for example.) I beg the reader's pardon for the many different versions of names and places to be found in this transcription.

I have endeavored to transcribe the diaries exactly as they appear in every detail. Sometimes the text is very conversational in tone, and there are occasional lapses in spelling and grammar. In this regard, the Martins should not be judged harshly since these are, after all, personal diaries, and were never proofread.

Throughout, you may notice that pronouns referring to God and Jesus are not capitalized, as is our present custom. As these people were dedicated and educated missionaries and would certainly have known better, I can only conclude that this was simply the custom of the time, and I have not added any capital letters where none appeared in the original (or in the newspaper clipping dated January 22nd, 1864, and reproduced in Carl's diary, Volume 2, Part 3). The phrase "native Christians" appears frequently; native Christians are ethnic Chinese who became Christianized. The diaries have been divided into parts for purely mechanical reasons, to make organization and printing easier.

I have transcribed these diaries so that others may read and be inspired by the experiences and travails of Carl and Mary Martin and their small family. I only hope that Carl's faith and determination and the pathos and emotion that fairly radiated from the pages as written in Mary's own strong hand will be apprehended by those who read these words in more formal print, and that the reader may draw inspiration from them, as I have.

John Lucius Buttolph, III
January 1993
Morrisville, Vermont

On Board Ship Eureka Bound for Shanghai, China. November 8th, 1858¹

[1]² **8th** – On account of sea-sickness this is the earliest date I have been able to write since we set sail which was from New York Harbor on the 27th of October 1858¹. We came on board at 8 o'clock on the 26th and in a few moments our ship was gotten from Pier 20, East River where she was loaded and was anchored in North River opposite the Battery a short distance. Bro. Terry came on board with us and came as far as the Anchorage and there left with the Pilot. During the day we busied ourselves in arranging our State Room + in getting acquainted with our fellow passengers +c. Our Captain's name is B.F. Cutler a midling sized man I should think about 30 years old. He is a professor of Religion and member of the Baptist Church. A pleasant agreeable man, very obliging. His wife is also on board and and [sic] an infant daughter who are going out with him. We have on board a Missionary of the Baptist Board, his wife and daughter Annie 11 yrs of age—the Rev Mr. Yates. He has been in Shanghai 12 yrs and has been to Europe on a visit + is now returning to resume his work. Also 3 young men by the names of Smith, Egerton + Wesson all professedly pious and members of Church. There are about 20 of the Crew including officers + sailors.

[2] **Nov 17th N.Lat 5.39 W Lon 27.47**³. Since we set sail the weather has been good, generally. Soon after crossing the Gulf Stream we soon [sic] fell in with the trade winds which did us good service though at this date they have left us within about six degrees of the Equator. For two or three days there has been almost a calm, which is very disagreeable indeed. Now and then a squall has struck the ship sometimes favorably at others unfavorably.

¹ *Transcriber's Note: I am at a loss to explain the year here "1858". Surely, the year was 1859, as evidenced by almost daily chronological entries for the next four years. 1858 is written here and once again 1858 appears down a few lines, but from then on the year is 1859. Perhaps the year was written in at a later date. This intpretation is bolstered by a diary entry in Mary's diary, dated November 26th, 1864: "Five years ago this day my dear husband and I went on board the 'Eureka' for our distant home." She, however, apparently gets the month wrong, since according to Carlos' diary it was October 26th.*

² *Transcriber's Note: Numbers in brackets are page numbers of the handwritten diary. Rev. Martin numbers them in his own hand for thirty pages, and I have continued them in pencil to make references to the handwritten text easier.*

³ *Transcriber's Note: Most of the latitude and longitude notations, as well as the dates, are written in the margins of the diary.*

Sickness I was taken sick the second day out at the dinner table. I suffered severely for nearly two weeks. I had no peace day nor night. I vomited up everything I took into my stomach and everything I had in it good + bad. For several days I ate scarcely anything but a little meal gruel. At this date I am pretty well though not entirely. The rocking of the vessel occasionally makes me feel that all within is soon to be disgorged.

My wife has not suffered so much from sea sickness as myself. She has suffered quite as much from a sick-Head-Ache. She is suffering from this today.

Temperature For several days the Thermometer has stood at about 82 dg but owing to the breezes it has not been very uncomfortably warm.

Vessels We have seen several vessel since we sailed. On the second sabbath a Portuguese ship came along side within speaking distance but [3] there was no interchange of words, only the hoisting of colors. Most of the vessels have been going the same way though at a distance from us.

Fish After we had been out but a little while we saw a great many flying Fish. They are not so large as I supposed. When flying they appear not much larger than a Snow Bird of New England.

Three Dolphins have been caught with a Hook + line of a smallish size and "served up" for eating which were stowed away with a hearty relish, though some feared they might be poisoned. The Dolphin is a pretty formed fish. He is thin and sharp. The upper part of his head is convex and well formed to cut the water. When seen in the water he is of a beautiful blue color. When taken out he changes his color into many hues before dying one of which is gold.

Day before yesterday Bro Yates caught a small shark that came alongside the vessel. It was quite a curiosity to men, women + children. He is an ugly looking fish, without attempting to discribe [sic] him further.

One morning two Porpoise scud by the ship at a fierce rate. It was the second sabbath. They were not of a large size. Today the air is hot + sultry we are not making much headway. At this rate it will be several days before we reach the Equator.

Religious Many are + have been [sic] the mercies of God on board. He is truly our Keeper and Guide. And on him must we ever depend.

[4] **1859 Nov 18th North 5.15 East 28.2** Today the weather is very warm, but somewhat squally. The wind is first in one direction then in another we are in what the Captain calls "The Doldrums". After much tacking we have made 24 miles the past 24 hours. We are anxiously waiting for the "South East Trades". A "Yankee Brig" came near enough to hoist her colors but she had no "signals". We however raised ours.

Nothing particular has occured. Having been so much affected with sea-sickness I have no regular system of doing things as yet. I read +

study when I feel like it, go to bed and get up when I please. Do not mean this shall be the case long however. I like system + order.

Sat. 18th Lat 3.47 Lon 27. Today a fresh breeze springing up, which was as much a squall as anything, being cloudy + rainy, we have fallen in with the "Trades" from the south. They are rather unfavorable driving us somewhat out of our course. We are sailing nearly westward.

Just at night we saw off in the distance the smoke of a large steam ship which the Captain with glass in hand concluded to be a British "Man of War".

We have had more or less rain today. Am happy in the favor of God a [sic] the close of the day.

[5] **1859 Nov. 24 Lat 5.18S Lon 32.45** I record with thankfulness the mercies of God the past few days. I have almost entirely recovered from Sea-Sickness. Occasionally feel a sort of heaviness in my head when the ship rolls or lurches. Mrs. Martin is quite smart, except now and then the head-ache.

Equator We crossed the Equator on last Monday on a south west by west Tack. We crossed it again on Monday night on a N.E. Tack + again on Tuesday for the last time for the present. We are now going at a good speed nearly south. Passed by Cape St. Roque⁴, though not in sight this morning. **Rate** The past day we made 175 miles. If we make as good time accordingly the rest of the voyage as we have this far we shall reach Shanghai in less than a hundred days. We were only 25 days out from N. Y. to the Equator. It is just four weeks to the day since We set sail. They have been weeks of sore trial to both body + soul, but I trust have been for our spiritual good.

Crime Nothing of particular interest has occurred on board except a case of stabbing last Sunday. While we were eating our dinner some trouble was had between a sailor and the second mate and in the affray the sailor took his sheath knife and cut a large gash in the left arm of the second mate. The Culprit sailor is now in irons in the "Booby Hatch" fed on bread + water. He is a young man but looks one old in sin.

[6] **1859 Nov. 25 Lat 7.58 Lon 32.52 South and West** Today it has been very warm. A fresh breeze has modified the heat somewhat. We have made good progress -173 miles -. The sea is not very rough, though more so than north of the Equator under the "N.E. Trades".

Daily I feel an increase of strength. Think I shall gradually grow into the favor of a life on the sea. My eyes have been very weak as well as

⁴ *Transcriber's Note: Cape Saõ Roque or Cabo de Saõ Roque: Cape, East coast of the state of Rio Grande do Norte, NE Brazil, N of city of Natal*

the rest of my body and they remain so still in a measure. Sometimes when I attempt to read or study a blurr seems to come over the words and sentences and with regret I have to lay the book aside. But I feel very grateful that it is no worse with me.

I have read some in the Greek Testament, one of "Wesley's Sermons" and some in a copy of the "American Agriculturist" a whole volume of which the Editor-Bro. Orange Judd, Water St. N.B.-gave me before sailing. I find much to amuse and instruct in the paper. I think he said he would send it to me in Fuh Chau. I have also been imitating "Jack the Sail Maker". But the Needle and the Palm hurt my hand and my back ached so that I soon left the sail for more skilful hands to finish. "I still abide. Close sheltered in the Savior's side." My heart has peace + Heaven.

[7] **Nov 26 Lat. 10.45 south** Today has been warmer than yesterday because there has been but little wind. This evening we are going only 2 1/2 knots an hour. At 12 o'clock the distance made the past 24 hours was 172 miles. I have done but little today, the heat has been so oppressive producing much languor of body and stupidity of mind. Towards night however took some bodily exercise with "The Blocks" [Blacks?] a kind of chance play on the "Poop Deck" which I would not countenance only for the exercise it gives the body and the exhilaration it gives the mind. After supper Mrs. Martin + myself went on deck and stayed till nearly 8 o'clock. Just as we arrived on the "Poop" the sun was sinking behind - not the green hills of our own native state - but the deep blue waters of the ocean. It was a beautiful scene and such as has often been described. The Captain introduced a new sort of exercise, viz: "jumping the rope", which Annie and the "Mate" executed very well but the rest of us "gave in heat".

So another week has flown into the past making One Calendar Month since we embarked our all on this Good Ship. How many have been the mercies of God. Let him have my all for his glory. Let me not keep back anything from him who has sacrificed the first gift in the Universe for my eternal salvation. Amen. Here is my all.

[8] **Nov 27th S. Lat 12 Lon. W 32.28** Today is the Lord's - the day of rest - the best of all the seven to the thousands who meet in the "Courts of Zion". How I would like to be in some Christian congregation beneath the trappings [?] of the Sanctuary. But now I am far from the place where the sound of the "Church going bell is heard". But the Christian's "God is not confined to Courts by mortals Trod". His temple is the broad arch of the sky which is over the sea as well as the land, pagan as well as Christian countries. He hears prayer on the waves of the ocean leap they ever so madly and he sends down his blessings into the mariner's heart while the elements beat threateningly against his tumbling back. As yet we have had no extra sabbath service. Bro. Yates

is an older man than myself, has crossed the ocean the third time including this. I have been waiting for him to move in this direction especially as the Captain is a member of the same church. Perhaps I am not justifiable in keeping silent. Lord teach me my duty. I long, on such a day as this, to converse with the sailors and distribute some tracts + books. Perhaps I shall have the opportunity ere long. I have not felt well today. The air has been very hot and stupifying. Have read some in "Wesley's Works", however have sung some of our sacred tunes.

This evening Bro. Yates read part of a sermon by Rev. Mr. Williams on the first clause of the Lord's Prayer. He proposes to do the same hereafter.

[9] **Nov 28th S. Lat 14 W. Lon 32.** We have made but little progress today. While I write there is almost a calm. Probably before morning a breeze will spring up before morning [sic] and carry us along rapidly.

From yesterday noon till today noon we made 94 miles which considering the wind was very good. Nothing particular today.

29th About 16 + 32 Very pleasant warm. 74 miles made. Towards night passed and signaled a very large "Yankee [?] Ship", "Homeward Bound". We did not learn her name. A Dolphin was caught for supper.

It was beautiful to sit on deck this evening and see the southern starry heavens. How does evening contemplation lift our souls from the visible to the invisible + eternal.

30th Lat 17.10 Lon 31.40 118 m Today has passed away pleasantly. Though the thermometer has been a little above 80 yet the breeze has modified the air so as to be very comfortable. Two vessels passed us on the "lee side", one near the other distant. The near one was a Brazilian the other either a Dutch or Spanish. Her name is the Castilla.

For dinner we had some fish caught by the sailors called by them "skip jacks" – very good indeed. The meat is much like salmon. Have read in "The Middle Kingdom". Peace is believing.

[10] **1859 Dec 1st. Made 198 m.** Today commences the last month of the year. How soon will another year have flown away. Shall not the month bear a favorable report to the "Board Room of Eternity"? Though far from the haunts of the sirens [?] a pure sea beneath + a pure sky above and the surrounding circumstances calculated to raise the tone of piety, yet, even here are temptations to ensnare + captivate. May grace assist me to conquer sin + give all the room in my heart to the Heavenly Christ - Jesus, my Saviour.

Commenced reading Hue's [?] Description of a Journey through China. Am highly pleased with his style and the matter written.

Dec 2nd 160 Miles Today we are almost under the sun. It is a little north of us say 20 or thirty miles. While we are in midsummer our friends in Vermont are suffering the keen blasts of winter. But how delightful to share in many of their comforts we can not have here nor in the land we seek. But the same God is ours and such the Son of his love. Cheerfully will I forget the comforts of home to perform my mission to the Lord.

Have read two chapters in Hue - the introduction of "Conant's [?] Translation of the Book of Job". I like his views + plan [?] very much. Busied myself fixing my room. Spent a portion of the evening on deck.

During the day looked over a few sections in Hogenback's [?] history of Lectures [?].

[11] **Dec 3rd Lat 24.50 Lon 28.29 Made 163 Miles** With the close of this day ends another week. How varied and rich have been the mercies I have received. I have almost if not quite recovered my health. I think if I were on land I should unusually healthy [?]. But this constant motion is hard to get used to. I am thankful it is no worse. I have sweet communion with the Father of my spirit and trust I am nearer Heaven than a week ago in point of piety.

Have read one chapter in Huc's [?] Travels in China. Some in the "Middle Kingdom". Also translated some in my Greek Testament. The weather is getting a little more cool. We cross [sic] the Tropic of Capricorn some time during the past 24 hours. Our course is a little east by south. The sky is generally clear. The sunsets + rises are very fine enough of themselves to make one a lover of nature and lead one to think of its God.

4th Today has been the sabbath of the Lord. Very hot. Sun almost vertical. Thermometer about 82. But little wind. Smooth sea.

Have read my bible – Two sermons of J. Wesley, and sweetly communed with God and Christ my Savior. My heart has been pained for the want of opportunity to be more usefully employed in my masters service. Hope to be able to record some efforts put forth, at least, for the glory of God before the voyage is completed.

This evening's was the finest sunset we have seen. Mary and I were sitting on the sofa when the Mate called us up on deck to witness it. The water as far as the eye could reach was as placid and smooth as ever I saw the waters of the beautiful Lake Champlain of my [12] own native state. Off in the east along the horizon the sea was skirted above with dark heavy leaden clouds, while above it (the sky) gradually grew lighter till you came to the western portion. There were to be seen clouds of a fiery red color for a long distance north + south with those of a darker hue above. Every thing was so soft + mild it was almost enchanting. After gazing for a long time thrilled with the beauty of the scenery around, Mary and I walked the deck til it was nearly time for prayers.

After prayers we had quite a discussion concerning the gift of tongues. Bro. Yates holding that only the Apostles only [sic] receiving the gift, I that the 12 received a tongue each [?]. I think I proved my position from scripture.

The discussion arose from some remarks of Kitte [?] which he had been reading. Today the thermometer has stood 84 the highest of any time.

Dec 5th Lat. 27 20 S. Lon 27th W. 90 Miles Ther. 77. Today has been beautiful beyond description. Light breezes. We have nearly if not quite lost the "Trades". A large bird called the "Sheir [?] Water Bird" of a darkish color was seen about the vessel nearly all the afternoon apparently after something to eat. He seemed to understand how to find anything that might be thrown overboard, for he would fly alongside the ship then take her wake and fly far back close to the water. An unsuccessful attempt was made to catch it by putting bait aft with a small piece of wood for a float. Finished the first Vol. of Huc [?]. Read Wesley + Testament.

[13] **Dec 6th Lat 28.38 Lon 26.43 Dis 71 m** Today has been one of beauty. There has been almost a calm at times. This morning We spake to a Brig that was lying of [sic] a short distance to the west, i.e., we spake by our colors + pendants. She is from London 56 days out bound for Madras. I conclude she has passengers from her having an Awning over her Poop Deck. She has been near us all day. Five vessels besides are in sight bound with us. The sight and nearness of so many vessels makes us feel homelike and contented. But how soon would a heavy sea separate us widely to be in company. Thus is it in life. We spend a few brief days in the company of kindred spirits adverse winds drive us far from their society or the call of duty bids us separate to meet no more on earth. But well is it with us if withal we are all bound the same way to the same Port where finally we shall greet each other safe arrived and sing our dangers oer.

Put one trunk down in the "Rime". [?]

For several days past we have been troubled with the assaults of a small species of the fly. Their number is not quite legion perhaps but their appearance in the butter sugar and other eatables is not very gratifying. A large insect called a "Roach", which I never saw elsewhere is frequently seen strolling around at night. I have seen one in my room the size of a Beetle. I have not learned its habits but think they are miceish. [?]

My communion with God has been sweet but mixed with too much of earth. I pant [?] for more Religion.

[14] **Dec 7th Lat 30.8 Lon 25.44 Dis 110 m Ther 76** Today has been coolish. This afternoot put on a thick coat. The wind has been increasing since noon and we are now sailing 8 or 10 knots an hour.

While sporting today Mr. Wesson lost his cap overboard. This afternoon not feeling very well lay down in my berth and took a nap an hour or two. Have not read much today. Translated a few verses in the Greek Testament. Wrote some in a letter to Dr. Durbin. Have not walked so closely with God as I ought, yet, I feel that I am his child though sinful + erring. How precious is the intercession of my Advocate.

8th dis 200 m Today the wind has been strong. A high + rough sea. Our course has been nearly south east. Several birds of the Haglet [?] specie [sic] have followed us apparently after food. The rolling of the ship makes me sick again. Cooler.

9th lat 33.58 dis 252 m Have been sick today on account of the roughness of the sea. Unable to sit up much or eat. The birds I spoke of yesterday are following us still with the addition, occasionally, of a larger one called the Albatross. A very handsome bird with a body of a snow white color but gray wings with white spots. It is about the size of a large goose. It has been very cool today. Have worn my shawl [?] most of the time.

[15] **Dec 10th lat 34.56 lon 16.47 dis. 120 m** The wind has been lighter than yesterday or day before yet the ship is rolled about by heavy swells from side to side. I am feeling some better than yesterday. Saw a school of Sperm Whales pass us today to the windward. It was pleasing to see them spout the water high in the air. We have seen several Finn-Back Whales. A very large Albatross came very near the stern of the ship. Bro. Yates tried to catch it with a hook + line.

13th lat 36.58 lon. 8.52 dis 135 m The last two or three days have been characterised by heavy winds and a rough sea or light breezes and heavy swells so that it has been most impossible to write and but little worth noting is occurred. I have been dizzy and sick some of the time at others very comfortable. I get along very well during the day if I rest well the night previous.

The number of birds about the vessel has increased. There are two sorts of the Haglett [Flaglett ?], one is black entirely the other has a white ring around its neck. There is a bird of which we have seen many much larger. Bro. Yates + the Captain managed to catch one of these this forenoon. Standing it appeared about the size of a Goose. It measured 6 ft 9 in from the tip of one wing to the tip of the other. Its beak was about six inches in length, perhaps eight + had a hook at the end made by the upper part bending over the lower like a Parrot's. Mr. Wesson tied a small phial around it containing on a slip of paper the name of the vessel Capt Officers Pass +c + then he was freed. His weight was 4 lb. 6 oz.

[16] Several Albatrosses have shown themselves this afternoon. We came very near catching one with hook + line.

I do wish I were a better man + Christian. How sinful I am. "The Chief of Sinners I am. But Jesus died for me." I hope through infinite mercy to find admission into the favor + Kingdom of God. Commenced the 2nd vol. of Hue [Huc?].

14th Lat 38.°6' lon 5.°29' dis 183 m Ther. 60° The day has been pleasant but cool. Light breezes + heavy swells + nothing of unusual occurrence. Have had a pain in my head which produces dullness. Commenced writing a letter to Lucius [?]. I wonder how I can sleep nights. The vessel rolls from side to side so that when awake it is with difficulty I can keep from moving + from tossing about in my berth, yet I do sleep soundly. I find, however, that in the morning the muscles of my neck are very lame which must arise from my head following the motion of the ship while the rest of the body remains braced in a quiet position. I long for the rest of Terra Firma.

15th Nothing of special interest has occurred today except the catching of an Albatross with a large hook and line baited with pork. He measured from the tip of one wing to the tip of the other 9 feet 9 inches. The Capt. killed, skinned his feet for money purses, while Bro. Yates took the bones from the two folds of either wing for knitting needles for his wife + Annie saving the quills also for writing. The bird had a very offensive smell. He looked like a regular gourmandizer. He could doubtless carry into his stomach immense quantities of decomposing flesh of clean or unclean beasts.

[17] **Dec 16th Lat 40° 31' S lon 1° 12' E dis 170 m** The weather continues cool though a wind from the north has moderated the cold somewhat. Have read some in Hue [Huc?]. Translated some in my Greek Text. A little sick to my stomach at suppertime unable to take much.

Had liberty in prayer at the family altar. O for a nearer access to the Mercy Seat where 'Heaven comes down to greet the soul'.

It is really amusing at the breakfast dinner or supper table when the ship is rolling first one way and then the other. The dishes slide hither + thither and away goes the tea then the soup and were it not for racks all around it would be impossible to keep anything on the table. But we don't mind it much everyone knows how to take care of himself.

17th lat 40°50' lon 6° 25' dis 245 m Today ends another week. How manifold are the mercies of God. Truly it is good to trust in him with all the heart. How clearly do I see the hand of God in leading me hither. O for grace to trust him for time to come. I am aware that trials await me that I have not thought of. But what care I if they shall go to work out that

greater weight of glory. May I strive to do the one work of my mission and with patience suffer the will of God.

18th dis 220 This has been the 8th Sabbath on the sea. However it has not seemed much like the sabbaths spent at home. How natural to think of the blessing once enjoyed but that we are deprived of now. I think of the congregations to which I have preached in quiet New England - my charges of last year in New Hampshire. I was not aware how strongly I loved those dear brethren + sisters. How I would like to enjoy for a short time the hospitality of their homes if in the way of Providence. May I so live + labor to be meet for the Sabbath of Heaven.

[Vol 1 Part 2 December 19th, 1859–January 19, 1860]

[18] **19th Dec. lat 41°51' S lon 16°23' dis 230 m** This day has passed without much to record. Did not feel well in the forenoon so I took my berth and slept off half the day. Sail ho! just at night.

Read some in Greek. Wrote some on a letter to my brother.

We passed the longitude of the Cape Good Hope today. Are about half way to China. Are now in the Indian Ocean. Our course is S.E by E.

20th lat 40° lon 22° dis 266 m Nothing of special interest has occurred. The weather continues cool; a little rain towards night. Not very well in body. A dull heavy feeling in my head and some sick at my stomach. A want of regular action in my bowels I suppose is the cause. Read in Hue [Huc?].

Have had sweet communion with my Heavenly Father through the intercessions + merit of his Son my Savior.

21st lat 41.57 lon 25°54' dis 178 After the refreshing sleep of the past night have enjoyed the day very much. It has been pleasant, breezes light, sea not rough. This morning Bro. Yates caught an Albatross that measured 10 ft 2 in across its back from the tip of one wing to the tip of the other. These birds have been flying about the vessel in great numbers for several days past. In this latitude this day corresponds to the 21st of June at home. It is one of the two longest days in the year.

I have a growing consciousness of my utter unworthiness before God but sometimes fear I am seeking my own more than his glory in spite of it. O that I may be actuated by right influences and reflect honor upon Christ constantly. I pray for a right view of my work and for a proper preparation of heart to engage in it. The Lord give me a love for the Chinese souls – souls of men.

[19] **Dec 22nd lat 42°16' lon 30°27' dis 212 m** Today has been very quiet. Nothing special has occurred. I have enjoyed myself tolerably well. Have passed the time in reading + writing and in the company of my beloved Mary.

Bro. Yates is not very well. Has a hard head-ache. I think it doubtful about his serving in the mission work much longer. If I am any judge his health is gradually declining. However I may be wrong in my opinion.

23rd lat. 41°55' lon. 32°10' dis. 85 m This day has been pleasant and moderately cool. But little wind has been stirring. Were it not for making the voyage longer and keeping us from our work in China I long to be in the work of preparation to preach to the poor heathen. But many miles are yet between us + them. By a vote of our little company we have celebrated this as Christmas Eve as it naturally comes on the 25 which is

Sunday. Little Annie wanted to hang up her stocking but does not want to do it on Sunday, so the vote. We have, after enjoying ourselves on the Deck and evening prayers, had a pleasant sing. Praise the Lord for the blessings of this day. O for a heart to praise him more as well as to improve on them better. Finished the 2nd volume of Huc [Hue?].

24th lat 42°46' lon 33°45' dis 85 This has been a remarkably sunny day though the cold has been increasing in coldness all the while till night. The wind has been blowing fresh this afternoon. This evening my wife + I took a fine walk on the quarter deck. We have celebrated this day as Christmas. Annie and the baby had several presents this morning from old Santa Clause. We had a good deal of pleasantry on board betimes during the day.

[20] **Porpoise** This forenoon a large 'school' of "Right Whale Porpoises" came playing about the prow of the ship. The Mate who has sailed for years in a "Whaling Vessel", seized a Harpoon, called his men and many [?] before made proper arrangements and taking his station under the Jib Boom on some of the chain rigging succeeded in hauling a large plump fellow to the great admiration of us all. He must have been some six feet in length and weighing from one hundred + fifty to two hundred pounds. His head was nearer like that of a hog than any other land animal. His body was nearly round and tapered off toward the tail which terminated in flukes like the whale. His breathing apparatus is also nearly similar. His skin was peeled off with quite a thickness of blubber enough for two or three gallons of oil. He was soon dressed off and the liver + heart given to the cook to serve up for dinner which was very good. The flesh is of a very dark color but has the grain of beef. It will in due time appear on the table for eating. The brains were taken out and with the addition of flour and other seasoning ingredients was made into pan cakes. I just tasted of one. It was far from being unpalatable.

While viewing this ranger of the sea I could not but think of the Father of all that is in the sea. In wisdom did he fashion it for an end indicating benevolence.

Thus ends another week. Had some liberty in prayer this evening. My cry is with God for more grace to go forward in the right.

[21] **25th lat 43°46' lon 36.28 dis 130** Sunday, the ninth we have spent on the ocean. It was a "Merry Christmas" in nature; at least, so it seemed. Though there was a very thick + damp fog in the morning, so that you could not see in the distance scarcely thrice the length of the ship, yet before noon it cleared away and the sun came out mild and smiled upon us 'til night. Our hearts were joyous and free as we paced the deck or read religious books and tracts or sung the hymns of Zion which, in the absence of religious services is the best manner of improving our time. We were favored with a sumptuous dinner than

C.R. Martin Diary, Volume 1 Part 2 Page 2

which there can be no better at sea. Soup as usual was our first dish. Afterward came two roasted geese fat + plump. Potatoes nicely cooked + boiled rice. Also Oysters which had been preserved in air tight cans almost as good as fresh and Tomatoes kept good in the same way. The third course was the customary dessert for Sunday viz: "Duff" which is brought conical shaped upon the table. It is made of flour and filled with raisins or dried currants and cooked by steaming it. It is mixed in salt water. Our supper was excellent especially some preserved peaches from N. Carolina which Mrs. Yates furnished. Some stewed prunes were also very palatable. We have reason to be thankful for the wholesome food we get at all times as well as the quantity. Perhaps one might think we make Sunday a day of feasting. But this is not so. I do not know that any extra labor was had to procure the above + and certainly there could be nothing more digestible. Perhaps I am too charitable being involved in the wrong myself.

Have had peace of mind and some joy in the Holy Ghost. I should enjoy myself better if I could have religious services on board in connection with Bro. Yates. But I have kept silent for him to move in this direction first on the ground that he is older and being of the same denomination with the Captain ought to take the first step.

[22] **Dec 26th. 43°36' 41°23' 230 m** Today has been very uncomfortably cold. A fresh breeze sprung this afternoon and this evening we are sailing 10 or 11 knots an hour.

We had for dinner some excellent sausage made from the flesh of the Porpoise caught Saturday. I hope we shall have more such. A school of Fin-Back Porpoise came about today but an attempt to catch one proved unsuccessful. We are sailing too fast to favor it.

Borrowed of the Captain "Livingston's Explorations in South Africa" with the intention of reading it through by course. I commenced studying the Science of Botany. My desire is to get a general knowledge of flowers + plants so as to be able to analyze, classify + define the order genera + species of them. I am much edified in the study. I look upon it as very desirable to be in sympathy with the beautiful and useful in nature. By these we are brought nearer the great Author – because we see his goodness displayed in providing these for our pleasure + comfort.

This evening my soul sweetly communed with the Father of spirits in secret. I feel unusually grateful for his kindness to me. Praise the Lord forever, O my soul and forget not all his benefits.

27th lat. 43°45' lon 46°35' dis 243 m This has been an unpleasant day especially the latter part of it. The wind has been very strong on the "beam" which with the waves produced a very disagreeable motion of the vessel. She would roll to the leeward and then all of a sudden would "fetch up" and give a sudden jerk which Mr. Wesson says is like the attempt to "crack a whip". It made Mr. Wesson + myself sick and all felt

very uncomfortably. We had some more of my favorite Porpoise sausages for dinner. While lying with my head in the lap of my affectionate wife talking of the mercies of God [23] my soul broke out in prayer + praise to the "Father of Lights". I do not recollect of a more signal manifestation of the savior's presence. O that the remnant of my days on earth may prove how much I love the cause of my Master.

Dec 28th lat 43°34' lon 51°1' dis 206 m. Today the wind has been more to the stern and the roll of the ship less disagreeable because more steady. Pleasant but cold. The ladies have to wear their shawls + gloves and then it is difficult to keep warm. In a week or two we shall be moving into warmer latitude if favored with wind. Had a pleasant chat with Bro. Yates on China affairs while sitting in the sun curled down behind the railing out of the wind on the "Quarter Deck". Have continued my study + reading. My heart goes out after more genuine piety. O for constant watchfulness against sin both outward and inward. The Lord help me to overcome more + more till I am wholly saved in Heaven my home. Bro. Yates is not well. Toothache.

29th 43°16' lon. [latitude?] 55° 51' lat. [longitude?] 220 dis. This has been a rough day. The sea has been higher than I have seen it before. The wind parted one of the sails; Several Seas passed over the "Poop Deck". The dishes rattled musically in the Pantry; every loose article moved about as if prompted by some spirit.

I did not suffer as much from sea sickness as is usual at such times. I enjoyed the wildness + roar of the ocean very much knowing it not to be severe enough to be dangerous.

Bro. Yates is still sick more from toothache than anything else. The duty of leading the evening devotions comes upon me alone. The Lord gives liberty in prayer.

[24] **Dec 30th lat 42°31' lon 60°57' dis 239 m** We have been under rapid motion most of the day. Sea not as heavy as yesterday. Have not been very well. Kept my room in the forenoon. Read in "Livingston Exploration + Studies in Botany" this Afternoon. Bro. Yates is some improved.

31st lat 42°10' lon 63°4' dis 138 This is the last day of 1859. The old year has gone into eternity with all its responsibilities, to be met again however at the "Great Day of Accounts". How wise to talk with the hours of the past year + "Ask them what report they have borne to Heaven and how they might have borne more welcome news".

The events of the past year with reference to myself have been important. They have given character to the whole future of my life. It was the last year of my Theological Course at Concord. I graduated in June the 9th. About the same time gave myself into the hands of Bishop

Blake for Appointment as a Missionary to China. Was received into the Eyrie Conference held at Pittsburg Pa. on the 13th of July and received my Appointment at the same time by Bishop Simpson by whom I was ordained Deacon + Elder at the East Genesee Conference held at Trumansburg N. Y. on the 13th of August. I was married on the 24th of August to my now excellent and devoted wife. On the 10th of October bade friends and home Adieu and came to the City of N. York where I remained at the Mission Rooms till the 26th of October when I with my wife came aboard this ship Eureka. I leave myself at the close of the Year in the Hands of God who forgives my sins and saves by his grace.

[25] 1860

Jan 1st lat 42°10' 69°20' lon dis 242 This Sabbath has ushered in the New Year. It has been rather unpleasant, the sea being rough. I have remained in my berth or state room a good share of the time with Mary. Read one of Wesley's Sermons to her and she to me from the "Pillar of Fire". But the rolling makes me feel uncomfortably. I do not feel I shall be kept from sea sickness when it is rough till I once more get on land.

I am resolved to devote myself more fully to the Lord. I am not satisfied with any period of my past life. But the past is atoned for. Christ Saves me now at the beginning of the year. O for constant faith to believe myself into the hands of God every moment.

2nd 41°43' 75°7' 260 dis The wind is bearing us onward with speed to our future field. Today I have felt very unwell. Lay in my berth part of the time. Read some in Livingston + studied in Botany.

This evening Bro. Yates made a few remarks in view of our relation to the past + present year. I felt a little rebuked for not doing so last night but excused myself on the ground of diffidence arising from certain circumstances and not being very well in connexion with the roughness of the ship. I am afraid I am afraid [sic] of man, and am in a snare. May the Lord help me to tear myself away from this snare. I know I am willing to take up every cross when I see it in the line of duty but does not the fear of man hinder me from seeing clearly the path in which duty bids me go. O for more respect for the glory of God and the good of mankind than the criticisms of men who are mortal. How feeble is the flesh. Lord savior I pray [?].

[26] **Jan 3d lat 40°42' lon 80°48' dis 267 m** Today we have sailed more miles than any preceeding. We are anticipating a quick passage. How it will cheer our hearts to once more gaze on something besides Sea + Skies + Sky + Seas.

Today we had for dinner some fresh, preserved Beef. It was really good. We have had some preserved Green Corn + Peas. We had these the first day of the year 1860.

I have read in Livingston + studied Botany. Have had some sore trials + mental conflicts. I feel the need of doing more for the cause of piety among us. O that the door may be open.

While walking on the Poop Deck this forenoon with Mrs. Martin I looked ahead + to the starboard side of the ship and saw large, black, fins above the surface of the water and in a second more saw the motion of the owners. I supposed them to be Porpoises and called out "Porpoises, Porpoises"! Bro. Yates on seeing them said, "Whales"! They turned out to be Black Fish, a species of Whale. There were also "Right Whale Porpoises" with them. I am informed that the Whale, the Black Fish, + the Right Whale Porpoises are the same genera. They are found together and live on the same food – "Squid" – Also their flukes are alike. They are horizontal with the water and they move them up + down instead of sideways like the "Finn Backs". The "squid" they eat is a small fish not more than a foot or two in length. I saw one that was taken out of the stomach of the Porpoise caught some time ago.

[27] Jan 4th lat 39°44' lon. 86°23' dis 271 We are moving on rapidly and such is the direction of the wind that there is but little motion to the ship. It is very agreeable sailing. The weather is much warmer and we shall soon be in the Tropics. When we get to 90° E. longitude we shall change our course northerly much more.

This afternoon it has rained in the form of a great mist. The rain this evening is still falling. This Afternoon a school of Porpoises, "Right Whale", played about the ship. The Mate struck three of them with his harpoon. One was killed outright but the instrument came out too soon to haul him in. I saw him lying on the surface of the water motionless. It seems too bad to kill the innocent creatures for naught; and to put them in misery with but a slight probability of getting them to dress.

5th lat 39°17' lon 90° dis 183 m Today has been unpleasant. The fog has continued more or less. A fresh breeze is springing up this evening. It is slightly colder. I see that my Wife has her cape on. Have looked over one of my old books and read some in Livingston. The Mate caught a Porpoise this afternoon. I took particular notice of his brain which was taken out whole. It resembles very much that of a man. It was closely folded and packed. It was in three parts like the human. I should judge it to be about the same in weight. We shall have some more Sausages. I have secured the lower jaw to keep as a curiosity.

Have enjoyed myself spiritually very well though have cause to lament the interrupted communion with God. Had some liberty in leading the devotions.

[28] Jan 6th dis 204 Nothing special today only sea sickness. The wind is blowing under the larboard bow and the ship has that disagreeable jerk mentioned some days ago. Have however read in Livingston and commenced a work of travels missionary life in Central Africa or Soudan by Rev. T.J. Bowen of the Southern Baptist Board. He went out in 1849 with Henry Goodale who died shortly at Sama among the Golah's. He gives an interesting account of Liberia and Colony there.

7th lat. 37°6' lon. 98°22' dis. 216 m Today I have felt sick nearly all the time though better towards night. The captain says we have got a head wind and he feels ugly.

One week more has gone. This is Saturday night. My heart goes out after God. I have just communed with him at the Throne of Grace. At peace with God + my conscience. Desire more submission to Heavenly will.

8th lat. 35°44' lon 101° miles 163 This is the eleventh sabbath of our voyage. It has been a sunny but rather rough day. It has passed away very agreeably to me and apparently so to all. This morning the Captain came to me and requested me to preach at 4 o'clock in the afternoon to which I consented. According when the hour came I took the head of the table and went through the experience as best as I could under the disadvantageous circumstances. Had it been more smooth the service would have been on deck where nearly all would have been present. [29] A good many of the sailors object to coming into the cabin because they have not clothes to dress respectably in. Even the hardened seamen have the sense of shame about them. Perhaps however this is more of an excuse. There were present notwithstanding four of the "Boys" viz: Jimmy, Charlie, George + "Abe". I had a peculiar feeling of interest for these young men and regret that I was not better prepared to speak to them of the truths of religion and exhort them to be Christians. May the Lord help me in the future in saying something to influence them from the ways of wickedness. The "Ship Carpenter" was in and sat next to me on the left. He sang with me the hymns + seemed much affected. I suspect he has been a professor of religion. The Captain was present and the Mate who is not a professor of religion but regards it favorably. But a short time before sailing was married to a pious Baptist lady in Stonington Ct. The passengers composed the remainder of my audience. My text was Matt. 6.33. The ship being in so much motion I sat in giving out the hymns + in preaching. I talked about 1/2 hour and had good attention. Before I concluded I began to be affected by the motion and as soon as I closed was sick + had to lie down. Had a severe headache.

On account of his health Bro. Yates declined at the commencement of the voyage from preaching. I was sea sick for the first month and did not recover my strength till a good while after, hence I could make no such

arrangements. Since I have become stronger and less liable to sickness I have had some fears to assume to assume all the responsibility alone which doubtless is a weakness. I find that a want of acquaintance with the world as well as individual fear have a tendency to make me remiss in duty. God helping I will try to be more faithful.

[30]³. **Jan 9th lat 32°51' lon 104°22' dis 238 miles** Have been some better today especially this afternoon; yet I took some medicine which has not yet taken effect. I may take more before retiring.

Sometime during the watch of the second mate last night the captain went on deck and found him asleep. It was the third time he had been caught in this manner. There was a heavy wind at the [time] and there was danger of losing not only the sails but also some of the spars. The captain coolly took him by the arm and forcibly led him of [sic] the deck ordering him not to come on again. He has thus lost his berth. Chagrined he went below and though he is now forward he has not suffered himself to be seen by the passengers. I think his punishment is just. He is degraded from a position which in my opinion he was not adequate nor worthy to fill. I formed a very low estimate of him at the first. He was profane + vulgar + conceited + overbearing to the sailors + had a fight with one in which he was stabbed in his arm. While conversing with him about the first of the voyage he inquired with a good [deal] of importance "Why do they not have more missionaries at home instead of sending so many abroad?" I told him it was my opinion there was a much larger proportion at home than in heathen lands: That besides a great many specially appointed to home mission fields, every minister of Christ is essentially a missionary and doing the work of a missionary, from which he wisely did not appeal. I pray he may see his folly + repent and turn to God. A Flying Fish was presented to Annie this evening by the Mate. It either flew into the ship or was washed over by a wave. It was some 10 inches in length. Its head is much like a frog's. Has curious wings.

[31] **Jan 10th lat 29°2' S. lon 106° 5' E. 150 miles.** Today has been very fine. We are coming into a warmer region and are quite comfortable. The Captain thinks we are in the South East Trades. We are going along smoothly though not rapidly. Feel some better than I did yesterday. I took cathartic this morning which has taken effect. Am in hopes to recover without further difficulty. Perhaps I am too anxious but I have a strong desire to see Fuh Chau and live to long be useful in preaching the gospel to ignorant + lost. I pray for bodily strength + mental vigor + large supplies of grace for the work before me; And I am resolved that if I am the instrument of good in heathen lands God shall have the glory; for I can only hope to succeed by his assistance.

Jan 11th lat 26°32' lon 107°28' dis 208 We have been sailing rapidly under the S.E. Trades. Have been rather squeamish though better in the Afternoon. The Ladies have been mending the "Ships Colors". I assisted them slightly.

This evening we are moving nearly 13 Knots an hour. At this rate we shall soon be among the Islands of Australasia.

12th Have been very uncomfortable in body today. Scarcely any appetite. Some thirsty: drank "Jamaican Ginger" diluted in water. A fine beverage.

This the 13th lon 111°19' 19°21' lat 210 dis. Weather very warm. Thermometer 84 in the Cabin. Not sick as yesterday. Have composed + written some. This evening we move very slowly. Have lost the "Trades".

[32] **Jan 14th lat 18°9' lon. 112°7' dis. 90 miles** Today though warm has been unsurpassed in loveliness by any we have passed at sea. Everything has conspired to make it such. The sky has been almost cloudless, the sun has shed its beam in splendor on the blue water that has been unusually smooth though there has been a pretty good breeze. The wind that we have now is called a "Monsoon". It is caused by the burning sands of Australia which change the direction of the South East Trades. It is delightful sailing. I suppose we are going at the rate of 8 or 9 Knots an hour yet the motion of the ship is but slightly perceptible.

Have finished Bowen's work on Central Africa. It is a work of some merit. It contains many useful facts before unknown to me and many practical hints.

So closes another week.

15th¹ This has been a very fine day. It is a sabbath day that I shall remember a long time. Spent the former part of the day in reading meditation + prayer. At four O'clock I went on the starboard of the "Poop Deck" and held Divine service, my congregation being on the "Main Deck" in front consisting of all the passengers + crew excepting one or two of the latter. After singing and reading the scriptures and invoking the blessing of God I preached the best I could from the Text "Thou God sent [seeist ?] me". The attention was good – very good on the part of the sailors. I was agreeably disappointed respecting their attendance + behavior. O that God will help me [33] to influence some of them, at least, to turn to the Lord. I shall try to get an opportunity to labor personally among them. I have the consent of the Captain.

¹ *Transcriber's Note: Although there are "latitude", "longitude" and "distance" indications in the margins, no actual figures are entered until February 2nd.*

16th Have studied + read. Today has been warm. Sea rather rough towards night.

17th Very warm. Cloudy. Some rain. We are within a short distance of "Sandal Wood Island".² Were in hopes of seeing it before night but on account of the heavy clouds we are unable and are "lying to" till morning with nearly all the sails furled. The sea is running about 2 or 3 miles an hour. This evening Mr. Egerton caught a Bird called the Booby that lit on the "Mizzen Topsail Yard". They have put him in the Big Pen for examination on the Morrow.

18th This morning about 7 o'clock a severe squall struck the ship. It came on very suddenly, before we were prepared for it. Several sails were badly torn and for a time it seemed that the masts + spars would be injured but I believe they were not injured. A large quantity of water come over on to the main deck. It ran into the forecandle and washed [one] of the Sailors out of his bunk and wet clothes + books. The storm soon passed off however and the day has passed quietly. Though this storm drove us back some distance yet we came in sight of land in the forenoon. [34] "Sandal Wood Island" has been in sight pretty much all day. It is the first land we have seen for 88 days, or since we lost sight of our own native shores. This Island is some 70 or 80 miles in length. It belongs to the Dutch. It has 20 or 30 villages on it. I should judge it to be very hilly. The mountains must rise several hundred feet above the level of the surrounding waters. One mountain Cape Blackwood the nearest to us, which was about 10 miles, rose in great majesty out of the waters. It looked certainly like a "Mountain of God". It had several sharp towering peaks. I went up the rattings until I could see the waves break at its feet. It looked like a long line of white foam. We could see trees with the naked eye distinctly near the water on the lower land. We supposed them to be "Cocoa Nut Trees". How good it seemed to see land once more. It has given us all a new feeling. The air is very sultry + hot. We shall pass the Island of Savir tonight and soon be in the "Ombay Passage"³ if all things favor. The position we are now in is somewhat dangerous; But we trust in Providence.

Little "Mamie" is a year old today. The last goose was killed to celebrate the anniversary.

A small Boneter [bonito?] was caught today with a hook. I have consulted Colton's Geography and he says that Sandal-wood Island is in

² *Transcriber's Note: Sandalwood Island, now called Sumba. Island of the Lesser Sunda Is., Indonesia, South of Flores and Southeast of Sumbawa, Separated from Timor on the East by the Savu Sea. According to Webster's New Geographical Dictionary (1972), it is 140 mi long, maximum width 50 mi, Population 1961: 251,126.*

³ *Transcriber's Note: Ombai Strait. Strait, extending on a curve between Alor Island on North and West, Timor on South, and Wetar Island on East; 17 mi wide; connects Banda Sea with East end of Savu Sea, Lesser Sunda Islands, Indonesia.*

the hand of independent chiefs. It produces Buffaloes, horses poultry + c. Also cotton and sandalwood. He gives it the name of "Sumba".

[35] **19th** It has been extremely warm today. The thermometer has stood 88° in the Cabin. We have seen other islands. Flores⁴, which has a volcano on it called Sobetobu 7200 ft. high. The Clouds covered it so that we could not see if it is extinct. It was a treat to gaze upon these mountains which seem to rise from the depth of the ocean to afford a throne for the "Storm King". Just at nightfall a heavy storm went over the ship and rested upon one lofty peak and poured forth its contents amid blackness + darkness. The sight was sublime + awful. Had there been thunder + lightening to give variety it would have been beyond anything I ever saw.

A very fine looking fish called the "Yellow Tail" on account of the color of his tail, was caught this afternoon. He was nearly three feet in length. We had the Boneter[?] caught yesterday for breakfast and shall have the "Yellow Tail" tomorrow morning. I suppose we shall see Timor⁵ tomorrow.

⁴ *Transcriber's Note: Flores. Island of the Lesser Sunda Islands, Indonesia, 224 mi long, 37 mi wide at West end; 6622 sq mi, population (1961) 803,000; largest Island in the chain extending from Java to Timor; lies East of Sumbawa and between Flores Sea and Savu Sea.*

⁵ *Transcriber's Note: Timor Island. South Malay Archipelago, easternmost of the Lesser Sunda Islands, between Savu Sea on the West and Timor Sea on the East. About 300 mi long by 10 to 65 mi wide; 13,094 sq mi.*

[Vol 1 Part 3 January 20th, 1860–March 22nd, 1860]

20th Last night we passed several islands. This morning we were up early to look upon land either side of us. We were in Ombay Passage in the narrowest part. The island of Ombay¹ on the north of us and Timor on the south. We were within two or three miles of Ombay. We could distinctly see the trees on the sloping side of the mountains. There were also patches of clearing covered with growing grain. Some of our company saw through the spy glass several huts. The inhabitants on this island were formerly cannibals. Near the water could be seen the soil in some places of a fiery [36] red color in others white. I suppose the latter were rocks where the soil had slid off into the water beneath. We could smell the fresh odor of the foliage and desired that some of the natives might come out to us with some of their nice fruit. There was a ship just ahead of us becalmed while we were going along at a pretty good rate. But soon she was favored with a breeze and was flying from us fast. When we came to where she was becalmed we were in the same fix. It was nearly noon before we got the breeze so as to keep our course. We are now in the Banda Sea² crossing [?] to weather. Bouru³ by Sunday if not before. The wind is so much ahead that we do not make great progress. While in the Ombay Passage this morning we saw a large school of "Sperm Whales". They were distinctly visible and went blowing along the starboard side of the ship a short distance. There were also a great many schools of Black Fish which passed us + a very large school of Porpoise. The sight of all these monsters of the deep in connection with the distant hills afforded us great pleasure.

21st This morning we were in sight of the vessel we saw yesterday morning and have been in sight all day. This evening she is several miles to the windward of us. Bouru is in sight and we hope to pass on the west side but fear we shall not be able. I had some interesting conversation with the third mate this afternoon on the subject of religion. He is a Swede. Has great respect for religion + don't know but he is a Christian.

[37] **22nd** This is the thirteenth sabbath we have been on the waters. We were unable to weather Bouru last night so we are on

¹ *Transcriber's Note: Ombai Island, now called Alor Island. East end of Lesser Sunda Islands, Indonesia, 20 mi North of Timor; about 60 mi long, 810 sq mi; very mountainous, highest point 6033 feet at East end.*

² *Transcriber's Note: Banda Sea. Body of water in East Malay Archipelago; maximum depth about 21,000 feet.*

³ *Transcriber's Note: Buru. Island of the West Moluccas, Indonesia, Malay Archipelago.*

the lee side still in the Banda Sea with scarcely any wind. We have made but little progress today. At one time a breeze sprung up and we were going 6 or 7 knots an hour but suddenly it died away and the sails hung idly to the yards. We did not have service today. The Captain said as they would have to be squaring or bracing the yards it would be impracticable. It has been very warm today the thermometer has stood as high as 90° in the Cabin which is unusual at sea. Such very hot weather makes us all feel very languid. We can hardly read with interest much less engage in meditation. I do not wonder at the indolence and [lethargy?] of the natives of the tropical islands + countries.

The hot weather so very dampens my spirits I can hardly tell as I have much religion if it is to be judged of by emotions. Indeed one has to walk altogether by faith.

23rd This morning we were not far from where we were last evening. In the forenoon there was a dead calm. The sea was smooth + glassy. A large school of "Finn Backs" passed a short distance from the vessel. The Boy George swam a few yards from the ship and and [sic] got an oar used by the natives of the near islands which was floating upon the water. The thin flat end was very wide like a shovel. The handle was short with a cross piece on the end. There were many small shell fish upon it and a larger reptile like animal. I don't know [38] what to call it. Mr Smith has it preserved in spirits and keeps the oar. A squall went over the ship this afternoon and we have made some headway. There was a nice shower of rain and we saw a small Water Spout. Tonight we are off the Island Amblaw⁴ near the entrance of the Manippa Straits⁵ with little or no wind.

24th We are yet near islands in the Straits of Manipa. We made no progress last night. This morning about 8 o'clock we had a heavy squall which favoring us we sailed several miles to the east of Amblaw near Bouro's eastern extremity. This evening we are in almost a calm. The island of Manipa is in view and the island of Amboina⁶. It has been very warm 90° (Fah). We have looked in vain for the Islanders to bring us their fruits. No farms to be seen distinctly though we saw what appeared to be a clearing on Bouro.

⁴ *Transcriber's Note: Ambelau.*

⁵ *Transcriber's Note: Manipa Strait. Cannel between Buru and Ceram islands in the Moluccas, East Malay Archipelago; connects Ceram Sea with Banda Sea.*

⁶ *Transcriber's Note: Amboina or Ambon. Island of the Moluccas, Indonesia, Malay Archipelago, off SW coast of Ceram Island; 31 mi long by 10 mi wide; 314 sq mi; population (1957) 72,679; formed by two long strips of land connected by narrow isthmus; has high peaks that are active volcanoes (highest Salhutu 3360 feet).*

The islands are covered mainly with a dense forest of trees which appear to be very large.

This morning a large school of sperm Porpoises were coming towards the ship jumping out of the water and playing their pranks when on discovering our vessel they suddenly sprang out of the water wheeled about and were soon out of sight. Saw a large Shark.

Got a good soaking in the rain this morning purposely. Afterwards rubbed myself dry and felt better.

[39] **25th** This has been another very warm day. In the fore part of the day a clam [sic] but in the after part a breeze sprung up and we came in sight of Oby Major⁷ + Lookisong on the weather bows just at night. After we had run up close to them the Captain gave orders to "Heave to" and lie till morning as it might not be safe to proceed in the dark. Saw a sail to the stern of us towards night.

26th This morning we arose early to see the islands we came up to last night. There was a slight breeze and we were sailing slowly by Lookisong which lay between us and Oby Major and is separated from the latter by a channel about a mile in width, with Pulo Gasses⁸ ahead. Being more or less becalmed we made but little headway till just at night when a breeze sprung up fresh and drove us along 8 or 9 knots an hour. We passed just at sundown the islands Sawu⁹, the Button which is shaped like a sugar loaf or an old fashioned Soldier's Coat Button, Kekik [?] + Pe Pisang [?] on the right, and have Dammon ahead on the weather bows. The vessel we saw yesterday has been in sight till towards night. Another vessel came in sight before noon and came so near that we could see her hull but they are both left far behind out of sight.

A large Shark came near today. Saw a school of Porpoises. Also a fine view of a sperm whale this morning. My soul desires more intimacy with Christ.

[40] **27th** Today we have crossed the Equator, and are once more in north latitude. It has been extremely warm. Tried to write some for the "Eureka Times", a paper that Annie Bates has started for the edification of all. It is too warm to do anything but lounge about in the shade.

⁷ *Transcriber's Note: Oby Islands. Island group of the North Central Moluccas, Indonesia; highest point 5285 feet, densely forested.*

⁸ *Transcriber's Note: Pulau (Poelau, Pulo). Malay term meaning "Island", often used with names of islands.*

⁹ *Transcriber's Note: Savu. Island of the Lesser Sunda Island, Indonesia; 23 mi long by 10 mi wide; with nearby islands, 200 sq mi; only port is Seba on NW coast.*

28th Very warm, light breezes. Have passed dangerous shoals and are in good sailing ground now. Have done but little save lying about in the shade. This closes another week. O for grace to commence the next aright.

29th This has been a day precious to my soul. Took comfort in reading the scriptures, in communion with God, in contemplating his councils + mercies to the children of men, in singing his praise in preaching to the passengers and sailors. We had religious service at four o'clock P.M. on deck. I took for my text Rev. 3d 18th. I never had better attention paid to me in preaching than from the sailors. May God cause the seed to grow. But one thing for a time drew the attention of all and for a few minutes distracted me. While on the first part of my sermon the pigs in the pen 9 in number commenced running + scampering with all their might as if their life depended on it. It provoked many smiles. It re-[41]minded me of Wesley who once preached in a hog house and while in the midst of his discourse the owner came and fed them and withal the cock overhead began to crow lustily, but he went on like myself as if nothing had happened. This evening got into a discussion with Mr. Smith on the doctrine of "Christian Perfection". It arose from his speaking of an obscurity of meaning in some of the writings of St. John, such as: "Pure religion and undefiled before G is is" + c [?]. "He that committeth sin is of the Devil." "He that is born of God doth not commit sin". I saw where the trouble was and asked him "if he thought it an impossibility for a Christian to live in this world and not sin". He replied in the affirmative. O how strange that any with the Bible for a guide who professes faith in Christ should be in so much darkness on such a vital part of our Holy Religion.

30th This has been a day extremely warm. We have made but a little progress on our way. We are near three small, low islands, called "Asias Islands"¹⁰. The Captain says the natives live much on Turtles. The land is not visible, only the tops of the trees. The natives are much like the China negroes. Have read with interest and profit a tract by Abel Stevens on the form of our China Government. Am endeavoring to walk nearer to my God. He owns me as his through Christ.

[42] **31st** We have made but a little headway except in longitude. Of the two we have lost instead of gained in latitude. The islands of Asias are still in sight. Warm. Have written some, and read a tract

¹⁰ *Transcriber's Note: Asia Islands. Group of three small islands, Indonesia; in World War II a Japanese observation post; captured by U.S. forces Nov. 20, 1944.*

by Dr. Bangs on the "Rites Ceremonies + Usages of the M.E. Church."

This afternoon a portion of the dead carcass of a whale passed us giving out a most offensive odor.

[43] **Feb. 1st** But little progress save in longitude though our course has N.E., on account of a current setting us back. We have drifted by this current from one degree north of the equator to a little south of the same. We are not many miles from the coast of New Guinea. Have read the tract of our society on the [blank] Mary is twenty one today.

2nd lat 1°6' N. lon 133°20' Are gaining in latitude today. Our course is mainly N.W. by North. Are in hopes to fetch the "Trades" soon, which will take us speedily to Shanghai. Our fresh water is growing scarce though we have a plenty to drink. We commenced yesterday washing our faces + hands in salt water.

Have read a review of the "Vestiges" in Littells Living Age vol VI for the year 1845.

3d Have made but little on our course today. Helen Shoals are to the windward or left of us.

4th This forenoon about 11 o'clock a squall struck our ship and took away the main + fore gallant masts. There did not appear to be much wind. They were furled up pretty sharp and the wind must have been harder above than below. They have been to work ever since getting the wreck cleared away; have succeeded in getting up another main gallant mast + sail.

[44] **5th** Today is the sabbath. On account of the accident yesterday the crew have been at work today getting up the fore gallant mast and setting the sails. It has hardly seemed like sabbath. Had no service. Very warm though not oppressive light breeze this afternoon.

6th Very, very, very warm. Am not well in body low in mind, though not despairing. I cling to the cross as my only hope. No wind drifting by the current south Easterly.

7th But little breeze. Course eastward by south. Very warm. Read some in "Harris' Preadamite Earth" some in Carpenters Introduction to the Bible.

8th Some wind: N.W.: warm. Read some. The sailors have caught a couple Dolphins this evening. Feel a sweet peace in my soul tonight. A calm resignation of all my setbacks into my Fathers hands.

[45] **9th** Have had a very good breeze. The captain thinks we have the "N.E. Trades", if so it will not be many days before we shall get to Shanghai. Saw a large school of "Cow fish". They are about the size of a Porpoise + somewhat similar.

10th The long looked for "Trades" are really wafting along. It seems like old times. The cross swells cause the ship to make some frightful plunges. We go up and down continually. I have not felt very sick yet though they have all been expecting it.

The Lord is my shepherd I shall not want.

11th lat. 6°31'N. lon 132°32' E. dis 150 A good breeze has been blowing us along. We have made 150 miles. At this rate it will not be over 10 days before we get a pilot, so says the captain. This closes another week. O how swiftly the weeks pass on, but how swift and free are the mercies of our God. Annie's paper caused us much amusement today.

12th lat 9°22' lon 131° 180 dis. This is the holy day; the sea has been so rough that some of us have been sick. I thought it not best to preach. Felt the comforts of religion in my heart. Had a sweet season [session?] in private prayer.

[46] **13th lat 11° lon 130 dis 158.** Very light wind, much smoother sea than yesterday. Have written some and read some. Got some things from my trunks in the room [?]. Feelings of sadness come over me when I think of parting with my fellow passengers with whom I have been so long connected even the sailors seem near to me. I shall long remember them. God bless them with his grace and may we meet again in the world of light.

14th lat 13°41' lon. 129°27' dis 138 We have moved gently on today; comfortably warm. We are all in good health and spirits generally. Had a roasted pig for dinner that with seven others was born + bred aboard the Ship. A strong gale this evening with a little rain. Have written some on letters to friends at home. Some liberty in prayer tonight. Full of Hope concerning the future. Thy will in me Lord be done and by me.

15th Today very rough especially towards night. A very strong wind.

16th Strong breeze, rough sea. Almost sea sick.

[47] **17th lat. 21°15' lon. 127°14' 180 miles** Today has been rather mild, rainy most of the time. This evening it is raining hard, it makes me think of a february thaw at home. It is the first hard rain storm we have had. It is very timely as we are so nearly out of water. We shall not have to wash our faces any more in salt water.

18th Somewhat rough. Sea Sick. Nothing new.

19th This the 17th Sunday. So rough not able to preach or read.

20th Not so rough today; feeling some better. We are east of the island of Formosa. Have read and written some.

21st Head winds. Have read and written. Not very well.

[48] **22nd** Head winds and calmy weather. Pleasant, and warm.

23d Sunny and mild. Nothing special has occurred. The wind has hauled so as to favor us. We are now on our course. The sea is very smooth. My heart goes out after God.

24th lat 26° 7' lon 126° This has been a lovely day. The wind has been fair but light. We passed in sight of one of the Lov Choo [?] islands, that mountainous and broken into cragy peaks, as if barren and unfruitful. Were in the same latitude at noon as Fuh Chau. This evening we are [with]in 300 miles of the mouth of Yang-Tsi River.

25th lat 28° Cool weather, growing colder constantly. The ocean has lost its deep blue color and looks very greenish; this is because of the shallowness of the water. Soundings may be had where we are now. Thankful for its mercies, another week has gone. Sometime during the coming week we hope to be safe in Shanghai.

[49] **26th** This is the 18th Sabbath we have been upon the waters. We were animated to see several Chinese boats during the day. We supposed them to be fishing boats. Some of them were sailing, others were drifting with the tide drying their nets. We saw one of their nets but not plainly enough to describe it. Saw also a foreign sail. The day has been cold and rough.

27th Increasingly cold. Saw more Chinese Boats. Thick and foggy, got no observations, are making but little headway.

28th Rough, thick and foggy weather. Still without observations, are unable to tell where we are. Had the stove put up in the Cabin this Afternoon.

29th Have made Saddle island today. Anchored in the bay about one o'clock P.M., where we shall stay till we get a good breeze for the river navigation. About eleven o'clock we came to where the yellow muddy water of the Yang Tsi river refuses to unite with the salt green water of the ocean. Imagine a green field of wheat beside the dried stubble of a removed crop and you see something similar in point of color. There are about three hundred Chinese fishing boats harbored in this bay with us. Their boats are curious handsome; they are well managed [?].

March

[50] **March 1st** The weather continuing heavy and foggy or cross as the Chinese say, we have not left our safe anchorage. The number of the boats have greatly increased, probably not many less than five hundred were anchored in the bay during a part of the day. Towards night it cleared away and many left and came back later. In the forenoon Bro Yates spoke to one boat and it came alongside and we gave them some bread and they gave us some fish, two baskets full. They said, when we offered to pay them, we had been good to them and they would not take any. We gave them pork and beef. They were very much delighted and so were we. They laughed and we laughed and they went away better off than when they came. Most of these fishermen are from Ningto [?].

2nd This morning we are called by the Captain's voice to see the boats leaving. It was a strange and beautiful sight to see two or three hundred little boats with sails of dark cloth following each other in a long line. Nearly all left and but few have returned tonight. The mate lowered a boat today and went to a distant sand beach for sand. The second and last time I accompanied them. Had fine time; got a good draught of cool fresh water that came sparkling down the hillside. A pretty little dam was constructed across the stream to hold [51] enough to be dipped up in a pail without roiling; we gathered several kinds of flowers, one looking very much like our home dandelion; also some shells and cuttle-fish bones; but the richest thing was a short visit to a Chinese hut containing five men but no females that we saw, though they might have been hid away. They were clever and were much amused with us. There was not a chair in the hut but several "horses" on which we sat. The house was of stone walls and thatched roof with no place but the door or hole for

entering, for ventilation. There were several articles of of [sic] furniture of a simple kind. We carried them some bread and while there they kindled a fire under a large pot in an arch and parched some corn which we brought away. Mr. Smith gave them some money. We are in hopes of getting under headway in the morning.

3d Have lain at anchor all this day. Went ashore in a small boat for some more sand; gave the Chinese another call. There were more of them than yesterday and the the [sic] second time going Bro. Yates went with us. After we had been to the top of the hill to look at a ship we came back and the hut was full. We had a good talk with them. The first time over today they made a fire, parched some corn, boiled some greens, and cooked some eggs, set their little square table, poured [52] out something hot from a tea pot that was unlike anything I ever drank: it was bitter and I should judge that there was something fermented in it, perhaps it was "Sam Shu". Went to the top of the hill with the mate and saw a small ship beating her way to the River.

4th This morning took up the anchor and came to the West of the Saddle islands, and got a Chinese Pilot at three o'clock P.M. and came along till seven or eight o'clock with the "flood tide" and cast anchor at or in the river Yang Tsi some distance from the light ship. Several other foreign vessels are anchored with us bound in. Our Pilot is a youngish looking man, short and light but covered with many layers of garments. He seems pleasant and is quite talkative. He takes his sleep for the night on the transome.

The excitement is intense in my own mind and I have to strive to keep an even balance of my feelings and judgment.

5th Took up the anchor this morning and passed the light ship seven or ten miles and there being no wind and the tide setting against cast anchor again where we shall remain till the flood tide tomorrow morning. Met two steamships - The Pieho [?] and [53] Yang Tsi bound down the coast. Have seen many very many Chinese junks and Ning po [?] Boats. The River is full of life and business. Towards night a small pilot boat came alongside with two foreigners. They both came aboard. One of them is mate of a bark that has run ashore on the Yang Tsi Cape the other a Comprader [?]. They told us all the news of importance. How good it seems to be so near our long journeys end.

6th Took up the anchor this morning and came past the beacon on the flood tide and by the wind by considerable tacking. The river is full of boats of the most grotesque form and of all sizes. I was struck with the beautiful dike which is built on the right bank of the River. It

is many hundred miles long and affords a good protection from the overflowing waters in the Typhoon Season.

7th Today came as far as Woosing + anchored about two o'clock. It is a dirty looking little town. The tallest and most noted building is the Custom house. Ran into a junk or she ran into us; no great damage was done. The Indiaman [?] came past us in the morning before we got under way. We passed her again and after anchoring the passengers came aboard our ship. They are the [54] American Consul to Fuh Chou and little girl, Rev Mr Jenkins + wife and Rev Mr Farnum [?] + wife and Mr Pemberton. We had a very pleasant visit [with] them. She left N.Y. two days later than we did. The Captain has gone up to Shanghai and will return later with letters.

8th Remained at Wasung [?] – on the ship – on account of head winds. I took, in company with Smith + Wesson a passage in the Pilot's boat and came to Shanghai. Called at Mr. Freemans and got his coolie to show me to Bro. Cunningham's. I found himself and wife very friendly and companionable. He had been apprized of my coming and was prepared to give me a cordial welcome into the bosom of his family. He showed me the room we are to occupy while I stay in this part of China. At four or thereabouts Bro. C + wife and their daughter came down to go back with me to the ship and greet the returning missionaries – the Yates. After stopping a short time at Mrs. Freemans we took the back voyage to the ship and arrived a little after dark. It was pleasing to see old friends meet and witness their conversions and Congratulations.

[55] **9th** Made the attempt to cross the bar today but got the ship aground in the "Chow Chow" water Where we remained till about one or two the next morning when the tide and wind favored and got off and anchored in deep water but in letting the anchor go the chain cracked as we supposed and by daylight found ourselved aground again a good ways below where we were yesterday but not in so bad a position.

10th Being aground we took some of our effects and took passage in a small boat belonging to the house of Jewett + Co. and came to Shanghai. We are now in comfortable quarters at Bro. Cunninghams.

11th Today is the sabbaii of the Lord. It has been very rainy bad weather. Attended the native Closs [?] Meeting, partook with the native members of the dying emblems [?] of the Lord Jesus, and listened to a sermon by Bro le – in Chinese. Thus, attending a

meeting in the Lord [?] Miss. Choss. [?] sermon by Bro. Le – has the day passed pleasantly away.

[56] **12th** Today it has been raining and muddy in the former part of the day. Bro. Yates + wife + Annie took dinner with us at Bro. Cunningham's. This afternoon went into the dirty stinking city itself. Went in by the south gate went to Bro. C's chapel, the native Chinese helper was preaching to about a dozen or twenty Chinamen, they paid good attention seemingly except some who would come in and stay a few moments and then leave and go off about their business seemingly unconscious of having heard either good or bad. After Bro. Le had preached we went around the city some to see what we could see, came to where there was a theatrical performance but it was all unmeaning to me went into a temple and saw a poor looking man bowing before a dumb idol with burning lights between him and it – then he took a box containing a large number of sticks and he shook them and shook them until one fell out which he picked up and read its numbers and then took a receipt corresponding with the number perhaps for [?] for some disuse. Poor deluded man. Went to the Temple [57] of Confucius but saw but little the doors being shut. Came back on the city wall. Having seen in this trip a good illustration of the 1st Chapter of Romans. This evening took tea with the Rev Mr. Jenkins.

13th This forenoon spent the time mostly in the study. This afternoon went to the store of Fogg + Co. and passed my bill of credit to Mr. Freeman of the firm and made some purchases, then called on Smith + Egerton at the Ester House with Bro. Le - then went to the "Eureka" which arrived this morning in good condition. The Capt. + wife were aboard and Mr. Wesson and in good spirits looked over my things some brought them together a little more compact, then returned here Smith and Egerton + Dr. Fish took tea with us.

14 15 16 17 18 19th During these days the time has passed away very pleasantly. The weather has been very disagreeable rainy most of the time with wind at the wholesale. Have engage[d] a passage to Fuh Chau on the "Richard Busteed - Capt Sherman. [?] Have made some purchases, such as forks spoons, paid for the freight of my goods on the Eureka to Russell + Co. Have been [58] into the native city again and have had something to do with the Chinese. I am convinced that they have the same general traits of character as the rest of the human family whith which I am acquainted though there has been + is a strange development. They are shamefully dirty and have no sense of shame whatever in manifestation. Nothing but the gospel can elevate them. O for the mighty saving power of God to

melt and move their hearts under the preaching of the truth. Went aboard the Eureka today.

20th Have not done much today but stay in doors. Did however do some business with the Captain of the "Richard Busteed" who came to see me made an appointment to meet him tomorrow at Foggs to take a boat and go on board his ship for our voyage to Fuh Chau. Finished + sealed letters.

21st This day have been very busy met the Capt. at Foggs but he had been unable to procure a boat. Got a boat and put on some of my things the remainder and send coolies with them to the ship. Saw the Captain again and fixed on two o'clock to go with him and Consul Governor to his ship which I did. After a [59] long time of waiting at the Consuls room the Pilot Boat came alongside the Bund and we soon were aboard with our luggage and all and speedily our Chinese craft made a walky [?] and before dark were safely on the big "sampan" which is to convey us to our home.

Thus have flown away nearly two weeks of pleasant tarrying in the society of dear friends in Shanghai whom we never saw before coming here. May the "Shepherd of his people" supply their luck on our account and make them to abound in the rich pastures of his grace.

We have rather close quarters in this vessel. The berths as well as the state room is very small but our stay will not be long we hope. The Captain has gone to Shanghai again.

22nd We have dropped down the river on the ebb tide some distance but unhappily run aground on the right bank. The Pilot thinks he will get off tonight. 1/2 past 7 P.M. the Captain has come. Says we must get off tomorrow and there is some hopes of getting a tug to assist.

[Vol 1 Part 4: March 23 – May 8th, 1860]

[60] **23rd** We are yet in the "Wosung River" having dropped down only in sight of the "Opium Ships". The Captain is yet at Shanghai. The day has been long and tedious, still we are well cared for our cabin is warm our food is excellent and abundant. My heart goes out for more of the mercy [?] of my savior. I see sin about me and am afraid to reprove it. I commend my soul to the Shepherd of souls, may I at least not be guilty of setting a bad example before my fellow creatures around me.

24th One more week has gone and still we are not to the end of our journey. Today we have come down over the "bar" passed the "Opium Ships" and anchored in sight of Wasung which is half a mile off. For some ways now the river is full of Chinese junks otherwise we could have gone much farther by the tide. The Captain came aboard today for good. This forenoon I sent a letter up to Bro Cunningham.

We have on board a large company of Chinese as passengers mostly merchants, one is a charterer of the ship and I am told is a rich man, one is a little boy rather sprightly looking but not manifestly active. It does not seem to be in a Chinaman to be active.

[61] **25th** Today we have lain at anchor all day. This morning the Capt. took in about fifty chests of opium to take to Foo Chow. It has not seemed much like Sunday. There have been more or less [?] on board.

26th The Capt. engaged a steamer this morning to tow us out beyond the marks. We left about noon and the steamer left us about two P.M. and we sailed within 8 or 10 miles of the light ship and anchored for the night.

27th Took up the anchor early passed the light ship about seven o'clock A.M. discharged the Pilot about three P.M. made saddle islands before dark and are going on course all night.

28th Have made all the points desired today a good breeze sailing 8, 10, + twelve miles an hour are in hopes of making the White Dog Islands at 10 P.M. tomorrow. Some sick.

29th This morning the captain hardly knew where we were having lost sight of land and the weather very thick however he made for the land and soon got a sight of Tring Zing [?] afterwards Aligator Island then the White Dog, which we reached and anchored about two o'clock P.M. + [?] night.

[62] **30th** A pilot not coming to us this morning we cruised about going north till we made and anchored under Matsu¹ island for the night.

31st This forenoon we saw a boat coming which proved to be a pilot. He came aboard about two o'clock P.M. but the wind was so light we made no sail. Saw a steamer go into the mouth of the river. It has been a most lovely day.

1st of April This morning the wind was high and the weather thick + foggy but we raised anchor and set sail but had to make three attempts before we could get up the river. A finer scenery I never witnessed than up the River Min². All call it the Hudson of China. We reached and anchored Pagoda Island about 4 P.M.

2nd Came to the mission in a small boat and had a happy interview with all the friend[s]. Bro. Baldwin secured a boat and we returned to the ship for my wife + part of my effects got back about 7 in the evening.

[63] **3d** Called in to see my house this morning. Received company + c today.

4th - 13th Have been busy in making acquaintances calling + making calls during this interval. Have also engaged a quantity of furniture to be moved so as to get to house keeping. Opened my goods which have all arrived safely which business furnished me no little pleasure.

O how manifold have been the mercies of God to me during a long voyage. May he be glorified in me all the days of my life and through eternity.

14th Today went with Bro Baldwin in the mission boat "Que Hong" going on foot 2 or 3 miles. I enjoyed the trip very much up the river. "Young Mi" [?], one of the native preachers was with me. He lives up in the country where we went. Stayed at his house over night. It is a real Chinese house, built of mud with no floor and little furniture. We took our food along with [us] including tea which Young Mi's wife made for us by pouring hot water on the leaves in a mud bowl. We slept on Young Mi's bedstead which [64] had no mattress [sic] for the board bottom nor no covering for our bodies. We had no pillows but one bamboo stick which I used and Baldwin used his Carpet Bag. We slept with our clothes on

¹ *Transcriber's Note: Matsu Island. South East China; on coast East-Northeast of Foochow; administered by Taiwan.*

² *Transcriber's Note: Min or Min-Kong River. Navigable river (kong), North central Fukien Province, South East China; about 250 mi long; flows South East into East China Sea near Foochow.*

even with slippers on our feet and used our shawls for coverlids. Though somewhat cool we slept rather soundly and were rested.

15th Arose about 7 o'clock had our meal and a[t] 8 o'clock started with Young Mi for a place about 2 miles distant where he was to preach. We arrived there about 9 o'clock found several of the native converts gathered in a wood [?] looking building or part of it. They gave each of us a copy of Yiu [?] and in a few minutes the service commenced consisting saying prayer saying sermon saying [sic] and lastly a class meeting at the close of which one or two of the brethren prayed. I gave in my testimony for Jesus and Bro Baldwin interpreted for me. There were about twenty in all two or three were floating [?]. One woman came and sat down in the door and missed [65] her child about a year old, a boy, he standing on the ground at the same time.

At about eleven we started back. Saw multitudes of women girls + boys carry bundles of wood on their shoulders which they had gathered on the hill side. There must have been more than a hundred of them.

We got back to Young Mi's about noon took a lunch Bro Baldwin read a sketch of the lives of two eminent ministers one of them his wife's father and a sermon of his also. Then commenced the second service of the day in one part of the house. It was about the same as in the forenoon on the hill.

After the service a short time we gathered up our luggage and prepared to start for our boat it looking as if it might soon rain though the time had not come that we engaged the boatmen to meet us to take our things along. Bro Baldwin asked who of their number would assist us in getting to our boat as our men had not arrived, none of them offered but Young the preacher who had already preached twice besides walking a distance. I do not know whether it was laziness or the want of good manners. We started but had not gone far before we met our men and assisted Young Mi. The Lord Bless him.

[66] We soon arrived at our boat and were soon going dropping down the river while Baldwin read extracts from a diary kept while in Concord, N.H. We got home about four P.M. Found our folk all well and passed away the evening and the night very pleasantly.

15th The interesting feature of the day is the moving into our house and commencing house keeping in earnest. We thought of eating our first meal by ourselves this evening but an invitation to dine at Mr Milne's [?] with Baldwins people prevented. Spent a very pleasant evening with them and him. Mr Dick came in late and left early. We returned to our house about 1/2 past 10 o'clock and slept for the first time in our own home very quietly.

16th 17th 18th 19th 20th 21st Have been at home most of the time during the week studying or busying myself in regulating things about the

house overseeing the making our little garden trimming the trees in our yard and setting things in order generally though much yet remains to be done.

[67] During the past week I have much spiritual enjoyment. My communion with God at the family altar has been very sweet. In the morning have my servants come in to prayers. My Cook reads a chapter in the Testament in Chinese. The Boy + Coolie can not read. They all kneel with myself + wife while I address the throne. My teacher does not get here till 9 or 10 o'clock. In the evening Mary + I read by course the Bible commencing the same the first night of our keeping house and then both of us pray vocally. Why sould I do all the praying aloud myself if there is a benefit to me in vocal family prayer why should I monopolize that good.

My secret devotions are fraught with many blessings. I love the Closet [?] may I never love it less but a great deal more.

So one more week has passed on to eternity. I have been in China, Fuh Chau now 3 weeks. I have hardly commenced the language. I can speak a few household terms to my servants such as come here go, the time of day and the names of many articles for the Table. Have learned the character for man great + Heaven.

[68] **Apr 22nd** Today has been the day of rest. Very warm in the former part of the almost over came me [sic]. About four in the afternoon a hard shower of rain fell with more or less wind.

I preach this Afternoon in the Chapel or Church to a small congregation from 2 Cor 4.18. The storm interrupted us somewhat. It was hard speaking as I was hoarse from a hard cold yet I trust a little good was done.

In the evening Mary read to me from "Words that shook the World" by Adams a notier [?] of Luther. And I read aloud from Stevens late "History of Methodism" which I am reading in [concise?]. Retired early and slept soundly.

23rd Arose at six, read some in His[tory] of Meth[odism] breakfasted at eight. Baldwin called on me with the carpenter that has done some work for me, paid him \$4.19 due him. Teacher came 1/2 past 10 A.M. Mary took her lesson which I continued to do some writing I had commenced and afterword put myself for a time under his tuition.

[69] I think I see into the language a little but hope soon to know more than I do now. Bro Gibson called in the forenoon to get an english bible which he forgot to bring from home for a service in Chinese at the church. Took dinner at 2 o'clock P.M. At 3 o'clock Baldwin came to assist me in settling with my cook the weeks expenses but was broken off by the coming of his wife en route for Po Ning Sung. Dr. Wentworth called for me to walk over there with [him] but as I had previously engaged to walk with Baldwin declined and he went over alone. I soon

started with Baldwin + wife baby + nurse coolies + chairs. We bye and bye entered the church of the American Board found Brother Hartwell in the desk drinking a cup of tea spoke with his wife + little daughter. After a time the congregation increased to a pretty respectable number. There were present of the missionaries all of the American Board + wives except Mrs. Woodin. Wentworth Gibson Baldwin and myself + Mrs Baldwin Bro Burns [?] native preachers and their own followers [?] and the native converts in general. This meeting was the monthly Minon Covenant [?] of prayer in Chinese. The meeting was full of [70] interest as far as I am able to judge. At its close spoke with the brethren started for home in company with Dr Wentworth + Gibson. Gibson + I took another street to hunt up some sugar – found some but did not buy, came home took supper early + Mrs Martin and I went to the Mission prayer meeting of the American Board. It was the best meeting of the kind I have attended in China. Came home at 10 P.M. and read the scriptures + had family prayers, received a rich blessing from the Lord of the Harvest, and retired tonight to my bed with renewed confidence in God and an increase of love for him + the world in my heart.

April 24th Arose at 7 o'clock with a slight headache which gradually wore away, took breakfast at 8 o'clock read in the spectator + History of Methodism till my teacher came which was about 10 A.M., then took a lesson practising on the tones + reading after him the 2nd Chapt. of Matthew trust I learned a little. Dined at 2 o'clock P.M. on soup beefsteak pork custard + fruit, such as oranges and pineapples. After dinner attended to my private devotions then read in the papers. Sent two papers to the young ladies. Baldwin came at four and finished settling with [71] with [sic] my cook, found him indebted to me over 600 cash gave him a dollar for table expenses this week. Took a walk at 1/2 past 8 o'clock P.M. with Mary. We were accompanied by Mr + Mrs Baldwin whose society we enjoy very much. We went as far as a certain Budhist Temple which we visited. The keepers treated us very kindly inviting us to take tea with them which we declined. Saw in the Temple two or three gods one of which was guarded by 1/2 dozen attendants as dumb + useless as itself. We were conducted around through a winding narrow pathway ascending part of the way by stairs to a very comfortable seat where the ladies sat + rested themselves, and gazed with admiration on the time + weather + foot worn stones that composed part of the fabric and also on the pots of flowers + shrubbery that beautified the side of the walk. There were many persons present to offer sacrifices to their ancestors + were enjoying a feast around a table spread with real Chinese viands.

In front of this temple is a theater where plays are witnessed at certain times. Below the temple and leading to it by a long flight of stairs is a small village. The scenery below on the banks of the river Min is delightful. Returning left Mary at Bro. Baldwins where we took tea. I

came home and informed my boy not to get supper, going back to Baldwins met him + went with him + took a game at quoits in which he won the game by a large majority. Took [72] tea with Baldwins at 1/2 past 7 o'clock had prayers and spent an hour in conversation and singing very pleasantly. Returned home at 1/2 past 9 o'clock. Attend to family devotions + wrote in my journal and retired at 1/2 past 10 o'clock.

Apr. 25th Arose at 7 o'clock dressed + washed + combed and read till breakfast which was at 8 o'clock precisely. After breakfast trimmed some fruit trees while the coolie cleaned away the limbs + dirt in the yard. Miss Beulah called on us a few moments in the forenoon and gathered a few flowers from our yard. My teacher came at 10 A.M. and I took a lesson in the tones + in reading the scriptures. Received a letter this forenoon from Bro. Cunningham, + Mrs. Martin one from Mrs. Cunningham of Shanghai informing us of a sad accident that happened to Mr. Pendleton the first mate of the ship Eureka preventing his return home in her. It seems he had a difficulty with one of the sailors and was thrown on the slippery deck with such violence as to break his leg. Poor fellow I pity him. He is with Mr Yates where he will be kindly treated. It seems by the letter that the French are making Shanghai their rendezvous during the coming contest while the British are at Chusan.

Have this afternoon written a letter to Mr Pendleton for his comfort in his affliction + commenced another for the Messenger, a paper published in Vt. edited by Bro. Alonzo Webster.

[73] At about 5 o'clock P.M. Bros. Baldwin + Burns called and I went with them to the small chapel near Russell + Co's to attend the preaching service. As soon as the door was opened the little room began to fill up and during most of the time was crowded while one of the native exhorters talked to his countrymen. After he had finished Bro Burns gave them a talk towards the close of which he got into a dispute with one or two who appeared to be much excited. After all was said books + hymns were distributed + eagerly received by the darkminded deluded + deluding people. May the Lord bless his own truth their conversion. Went with Baldwin after preaching to see about my table it is to be done in a day or two. Bro Burns took tea with us this evening. Had some talk with him about learning the classical Chinese characters which I have some thoughts of doing. After tea went to the weekly prayer meeting at Bro. Gibsons. Besides the members of our own mission there were present Mr. + Mrs. Pete + Mrs. Dolittle, Mr. Burns who led the meeting Dr Gibson, the constable of the British consulate + a Mr. Captain Corning of the ship "Benefactor". We had a very good meeting. Prayers were offered by Bro's Gibson Pete + Baldwin. Scriptures were expounded while read by Bro Burns. Returned home at 9 o'clock. Had a sweet season of family worship. I find an increasing fervency in my feelings while before the throne. Think I make daily progress in the Divine life. The Glory is the Lord's.

Apr. 26 Arose about 7 o'clock. The first thing done after dressing + thanks for protection during the night was to read in the History of Methodism in which I am getting much interested. Ate breakfast at 8 continued to read until my teacher came at 1/2 past 9. Took a lesson until 11 A.M. then continued to read. In the forenoon Gibson + Baldwin called. Before dinner called at Gibson's to see the Doctor for some medicine for my cold which is affecting my lung somewhat. Dined at 2 P.M. Took another lesson afterward. Dr. Gibson called with the medicine I went for. Dr. Wentworth + lady called went with them to the church to see what is needed to put it into a state of cleanliness. They stopped sometime with us afterward. Towards night Baldwin called with Mr. Milne an assistant at the consulate – British –. Took tea at 7 P.M. Spent the evening in writing. Had peace with myself + my Creator + all the world.

Friday 27th This forenoon in company with Bro. Baldwin's people went into the city proper of Fuh Chau to visit Mr Hartwell's people + call on Mr + Mrs Smith. Stopped on our way there to call on Bro. Burns who occupies a room in the Church of our denomination at Tsing Tau. He was well + seems to enjoy himself very well in his hermit kind of a life. I was much pleased with the nice church we have there. Saw Song Mi one of our converts who is an artist + Painter. He has some nice Chinese pictures.

[75] After stopping a while we went on and arrived at Mr Hartwells at 1/2 past 11 o'clock A.M. Mrs. H. was at home and the children. Bro. H. had gone to attend an adjourned mission meeting, but came home at 1/2 past 12. We dined at about 1/2 past 10 o'clock sat a while + conversed then called on Mr + Mrs Gev. Smith then took a trip about the city. Walked for some distance on the city wall. This wall is far superior to that around Shanghai and the city generally appeared more favorable. We called at two temples one a Budhist which is called the Temple of the Goddess of Mercy. We saw this Goddess and another called the "God of Happiness" The other temple was a Tourist Temple where we saw Shanti [?] the chief God of the Sect and his Prime Minister. The priests and attendants showed us much deference. After this we called at two stores and looked at some specimens of foreign cloth. Wherever we went we attracted great attention. The ladies were the chief objects of interest. Returned at 5 o'clock and after resting a few moments started home arrived at 1/2 past 6. Very tired. Met Mr Milne at the gate but he did not stop. Took supper at 7. Had some China Heralds [?] sent in + sent away our. [?] Read wrote + retired.

[76] **Apr. Saturday 28th** Spent the forenoon and part of the afternoon in preparing letters for the mail which left at four o'clock. Carried four to Bro. Baldwin to be sent to the office, one for home, one for the "Christian

Messenger", one to Mr Pendleton and one to Hamak Stearns of Fairfax, VT.

Dr. Wentworth called this morning a few moments to talk about my expenses here + c. Came to no definite conclusion as to how to settle the account. I think it of little importance. After sending letters to the mail read in "History of Methodism" about the conversion of Charles and John Wesley under Moravian influence.

At 1/2 past five took a short walk with Mary in company with Baldwin + wife. Took supper at 1/2 past six. Went to the class meeting at 1/2 past 7 at Baldwin's. It was one of profit to us all.

During the last week the Lord has been specially nigh unto me. He seems to help me in grounding [?] my affairs with discretion. I resign my all to him and he gives me abundance of grace to triumph.

Sunday 29th This morning after breakfast went to the chapel to attend the Chinese service. The native helper – I have not learned his name – read + expounded the scriptures saying a prayer before + after then followed a class meeting. I should think about thirty were present most of them however the scholars of the boarding school.

[77] After these services went home + read a good share of the time till four P.M. in the History of Methodism by Stevens. I am glad to find it so interesting + instructive. At 4 P.M. went to the regular english service. Rev Mr Woodin preached from Luke 16.31. He said the text was the concluding words of a parabolic dialogue. He gave a brief exegesis of the parable and stated the following proposition as observable from his text. Men who will not believe the present evidences of Christianity would not believe though a great + stupendous miracle should be performed before their eyes. He talked of those who wilfully disbelieve despite convincing testimony, of those who disbelieve because they will not take the trouble to look into those evidences of Christianity, of those evidences briefly + in particular + colored [?] with some solemn reflections respecting those who this disbelieve and thus act. May the truth take effect.

Came home + sung some with Mary. Just at night some of Gibson's scholars came into my yard and I conversed some with them. They made me understand that they were acquainted with the doctrine of the Trinity in unity repeating the names of the three persons in their language. They hurrying for supper I dismissed them.

This eve have read a chapter in the above history respecting Whitefield's second visit to America and the remarkable effect of his preaching.

[78] **Monday Apr 30.** The principal features of the day were settling with my cook, paying coolie + table boy, also the watchman. Studied the Monthly Meeting of the Mission at Baldwins + gave in my accounts as did

all the others. The meeting was opened by prayer by Dr Wentworth. It passed off very harmoniously. Baldwin concluded by prayer.

I should have said that I called at Ahok's this morning + bought six pounds of coffee, flour, and then I went to the cabinet shop to see about some furniture I have making.

About two o'clock I heard a strange outcry and several boys + men ran through my derr [?] yard + garden it was some time before I could make out what was the matter. I soon learned however by Gibson's coming and taking a man by the arm and leading him away. He was seen by a countryman to come over the high yard into the back yard of the church. He was detected in stealing some clothes from the Chinese + had gone into the Church and some of the boys seeing him there shut him in + then called for help. They put him in a room with his hands tied behind + nailed the door but he broke out 3 or 4 panes of glass + would have thrown himself out where the height was so great he must have been killed. After this he was tied to a post and the Consul being conferred with he called the Chinese authorities + they took [79] him away. How severely they will punish him we shall not know, perhaps not more then he deserves. Eve stayed at home and read to Mary.

Tuesday May 1st 1860 Today begins a new month. It is just one month today that we sailed up the Min and anchored at Pagoda Island. This forenoon the Cabinet Maker brought home my chairs. I pay him \$1.50 each. Have had made 1/2 doz. Have spoken for 1/2 doz more at \$1.80 apiece. Cabinet Maker also brought home a new Bureau which was \$8.00.

Have taken my lesson today which I did not yesterday to any extent. This afternoon went with Baldwin to "Atto" to attend a Chinese service. "Ing Quang" preached to a floating congregation at the close of which Baldwin gave the natives several tracts and books. Came back and stopped a short time at B's came home took tea at 7, read in the Journal +c. My soul is at rest + happy in the Lord.

Wednesday May 2nd Nothing in particular this forenoon. My teacher came at 10. Baldwin called on me with a Cabinet Maker who desired to make a sitter, but I had one making and desire no more just now.

[80] Went with Baldwin down to Russell + Co's. On the way stopped to see some of the workmen in my employ making furniture. Stopped some time at the home [?] of the Company. Baldwin got \$58.00. I had no special business. This afternoon used my teacher till nearly 4 o'clock then went over to Baldwin's + found there Bro. Burns + went with them to Quay Ting [?] to the native preaching. One of the Helpers talked + was followed by Burns, after which Baldwin distributed books to the eager receivers.

This Evening Dr. Wentworth Pete + Milne [?] called on us. The two later [sic] gentlemen took tea with us. After tea we all went to the weekly prayer.

Milne Pete + Martin returned at 1/2 past 9; retired at 1/2 past 10.

May Thursday 3d Today has been very warm indeed. This forenoon my new Table came. Very well pleased with it. Pay \$12.00 for it, but it is not much like tables at home at that price. Studied with my teacher two hours or more, then read the newspapers. After dinner went into the street as far as Ahok's, had no particular business, only to see + hear. Talked some with a Chinaman at Ahok's. This Eve the young ladies called on us Dr Wentworth Gibson a few moments. [81] Baldwins people took tea with us. Had a very good visit with them. Baldwin is witty + funny as ever and knows how to tease his wife who is up to him [in] every respect but strength.

May Sunday 6th Today have been at home most of the time reading singing + praying and conversing. The weather is rather cool, have had a sun most of the day. At 5 o'clock went to church. Bro Baldwin preached from Col. 2:14. His introduction was about the Cross as being the Center of attraction in the redemptive scheme. He divided his sermon into two heads 1st "Man's Condemnation" 2nd "God's remedy". The discourse produced a very good effect. After preaching and the congregation was dismissed Bro Gibson + Baldwin administered the Lords Supper to 16 or 18 communicants. It was rather solemn an impression to receive this service [?] in this brotherland. Eve stayed at home and enjoyed the society of my precious Mary who is dearer to me than all others on earth.

Monday May 7th This morning the Cabinet Maker brought home my sitter + center table which have been long in making. My teacher came at 1/2 past 9. Studied till noon then busied myself in walking about until I went into the Book room and [82] commenced adjusting the books more to my liking. During the afternoon settled with my cook. At four o'clock went with Mary to the Church to attend the Monthly Missionary Concert. There were present all the members of our Mission and all the missionaries of the other side except Mr + Mrs Smith of the Episcopal and Mrs. Dolittle. Bro Gibson lead the meeting opening it by singing, prayer + reading the scriptures. He then read Bro Long's last letter to the meeting and gave way for intelligence from others. Mr Burns Hartwell Pete + LL Baldwin spoke. Pete Wentworth + CC Baldwin prayed. Gibson pronounced the benediction + closed the meeting.

Eve at home. Was much refreshed at the family altar. Truly God is good and is ready to hear + answer prayer in China as elsewhere.

Tuesday May 8th Today has been warm + pleasant. Have not studied much of any though my teacher was on hand. I kept him writing while I busied myself about some household matters, assisting Mary pack away in tobacco some winter clothing and also a carpet.

Have had some trouble with my boy about a spoon that is missing of which he can give no account. I do not know as he is to blame; [83] I suspect my teacher. Have purchased some new locks for two rooms, called a carpenter to put on some new bolts where old ones have been broken and to make new shelves for lamps +c.

Another article of furniture came today viz. our new wash stand for which I pay \$3.00. I just at nightfall went with Baldwin and pitched a game of Quoits with him + the two Gibsons.

Eve At home.

[Vol 1 Part 5: May 9th – December 3rd, 1860]

Wednesday May 9th This forenoon have been at home studying + working. This afternoon went with Mary over to Po Ni Sang + called [on] the Reverends [Merssers] + families Pete Dolittle Baldwin + Wooden. Had a pleasant meeting + visit with them for a short one. Came home to tea and afterwards went over to Bro Gibson and lead the weekly prayer meeting.

Thursday May 10th 1860 Today have been at home most of the time. Was not very well in the fore part of the [day]. Read some in the "History of Methodism" stretched out on the sitter. This afternoon towards night went over to Baldwins + took with him + wife a walk there then took tea with us + spent the evening.

[84] **1860 Friday May 11.** Today, after a rainy night, is rather cold. Have had a fire part of the time. Have passed the time principally in my study. During the forepart of the day called on Baldwin's folks a few minutes for an errand. After dinner Mrs. B- came to see my wife and stayed some time. Baldwin at about 4 P.M. + I went with him to visit a prisoner in the British jail formerly a sailor on the "Red Gauntlet" but subsequently on a British Bark where he refused to comply with the captain's orders + hence was given over to the Authorities here. We talked, read the scriptures + prayed with him. He is from Williamsburg, N.Y., was a member of the Baptist Church there, failed in business or got into trouble with his partner and shipped for Shanghai. He is intelligent. After visiting him we went to our boat and went in it down to Hedges and got the true time and enquired about a certain roll of matting. Came back a little before dusk after going to the further end of the long bridge and dismissing the boatmen with the boat and looking about some things in various shops. When I got home found Mrs Wentworth. The Doctor soon came + took tea with us and we spent the evening very pleasantly. They left a little before 9 o'clock.

[85] **Saturday May 12th** Today has been marked by no peculiar circumstances except a visit to the country + hills south from the Mission. At 10 AM I started in company with Bro Baldwin for a walk + recreation. The first thing of interest we came to was a heathen temple where in front we saw several men + boys draped in mourning. The fixings + offerings about the temple showed that something was about to take place. We stopped + made some inquiry. The people were not bashful nor backward to tell us that they were going to have a ceremony for a person not long dead. They invited us in, made several inquiries of Baldwin who could [talk] with them about our affairs in America + our families even. They gave us tea + offered us their papers [prayers?]; bidding them good day we went on till we came to where were two pumps for irrigating the

rice fields one of which was worked by four men the other by four women. The treading of the pumps + the creaking of the pumps was rural indeed + took us [to] the country left at home.

Taking a canal or ditch full of water we went on till we came to a boy + girl catch[86]ing crabs for food which we stopped and examined + relieved their timidity in the presence of foreigners. Passing on we came to the suburbs of a Chinese village. We went into a school house + saw how they do there; had a chat with the teacher much to the surprise + fun of the scholars one of which was reciting his lesson with his back turned to his teacher. Going on we went through a grove of pines, through another beautiful grove of olives, then up a hill, then climbed the highest rock where we sat + sang + talked + admired the scenery. We could see the River Min each side in its two branches + the fields of growing rice or in preparation for it. It was charming to behold.

Returning we passed thru a village but most of the people seemed to be absent, I suppose in the fields. We stopped on the way back which was by another route than the one we went, at a heathen temple similar to the one that we before saw but it was closed; some boy showed [us] in by a back way. After having been nearly four hours + walked 5 or 6 miles + been called honog Brangs [?] twenty times or more we got home fatigued. Took dinner with Baldwin; stayed with them most [87] of the afternoon + of hour dusk [?]. Went in the evening to the Class Meeting + had a very good time.

Sunday May 13th

Today have been at home till 5 o'clock P.M. when went to the Church and attended Divine Service, bro Burns officiating. He gave us a very good talk, preaching in his Chinese Costume.

Monday May 14th

Have been at home most of the day. Gibson came in the forenoon and proposed selling me a bedstead. Wentworth came and I went with him to see a Canton Tailor. Went with Mary to see the said Bedstead. Gibson afterwards came + we told him we would take it at 9 dollars with a mattress of cotton.

This Eve went over to Po Mi Sang to prayer meeting a very good time. Mrs Wentworth came home in company with us or ahead of us.

[88] 1860

Tuesday May 15th. Today have been at home most of the time. This forenoon went over to Wentworth's + got a check on the Mission Books in Terry's name + sealed it up in a letter to him. Have spent some time this afternoon in study with my teacher. Gibson came over towards night + got him to cut my hair. Dr. Wentworth came to see my wife. Eve went to

Dr. W's + some of the guests spent the eve in singing. Came back at 9 o'clock.

Wednesday May 16th.

Today have been at home. My teacher sent word that he is sick + could not come. Have written some, read some + played some, spent some time putting up a bedstead. Some time passed away unemployed except in entertaining the boys of Gibson's school.

Eve went to the prayer meeting. It was led by Baldwin. Wentworth + the Gibson's not there.

May 17th. At home, reading writing + studying. Mailed three letters, one for bro Terry containing a check for one hundred + twenty dollars for him [89] to expend in purchases and send any balance home, one letter to Lucius + one to Mary's Father in Milton, VT.

This evening bro + sis Gibson, the doctor + Mrs. Corning came to tea + spent the evening pleasantly.

May Friday 18th. Today in the forenoon went down to the cabinet shop to see about my bedstead. Called also at Russell + Co - saw [Sloan?] + Mr Moore just returned from Hong Kong. Got from by sending "Williams Towie Dictionary" for \$7.00. [???] After coming back read some in the newly arrived papers + studied with my teacher. At four P.M. went to Baldwin's + we went with them to take a walk. Came back and found Miss Sally + Miss Bullock. They stayed + took tea with us + spent the evening I trust profitably as well as delightfully.

May 19th. Today is Saturday. Have passed the time chiefly in preparing for the morrow a sermon. Towards night took a walk with Mary. Baldwin was with us. Called in to see the baby – sick. Took tea with them. Had a severe headache. Nevertheless stayed to the Class Meeting. Matting came today.

[90] **May Sunday 20th.** After a night of pain in which time I called in Dr Gibson, I am allowed to see and spend another sabbath with tolerable health. Being under the influence of medicine did not arise till 10 or 11 o'clock A.M. Did not attend service till 5 o'clock when I went + held forth as best I could from Gen 5.24 to a larger than usual congregation. May the Lord cause some good to result. Spent the evening at home as usual.

May Monday 21st.

Today have not been very well in body. Have felt more or less weak. But my soul has felt strong in the Lord. This forenoon went over to Wentworth's + got an order on Russell + Co for \$64.00. Went down + drew the same, + paid out today above \$40.00 for articles bought. My

other wardrobe came today and also my new Bedstead. My teacher being sick did not use him much this afternoon. At about 8 o'clock went with Baldwin over to Ching Ching Fong the "Chinese Monthly Concert". The meeting was led by Rev. Mr Pete. Several prayers were made + some spoke with singing as usual. Came home about 1/2 past 6 o'clock. Eve at home with my family. I feel this evening strong love for the cause of God. Today have tried to walk with God. I know I have communion with Him. O for a warm approach to the Cross of Jesus.

[91] **May Tuesday 22nd.** Today have felt very well, have assisted in making some improvements in our house. We have put down a Matting Carpet and put up another bedstead after taking the Council's down. Studied some in the forenoon.

This evening went to Baldwin's to attend the singing with Mary. Dr Wentworth + wife were there + Dr Gibson besides. Came home at 9 o'clock.

Wednesday 23rd. Today has been very warm. In the forenoon studied with my teacher. In the afternoon Read Mr. Seward's speech in Congress in favor of the speedy Admission of Kansas as a free State. It is worthy of the man + will have an effect no doubt. Being languid took a nap. Then read in History of Methodism till Dr Gibson came to invite me to a game of quoits. Had very good exercise. After tea went to bro. Gibson's to the regular meeting. Besides the usual attendants there was a young man by the name of Sanford in care of the British Constable who is quite penitent for having wandered from his former attachments to Christ. He spoke feelingly. There was also Captain Keays of the "Golden Boyers" who prayed feelingly + intelligently. Mr's. Peter Baldwin + Burns likewise prayed. Very good time.

[92] **Thursday May 24th.** Today have been at home as usual pursuing the usual round of daily duties. Nothing of special importance has taken place. Towards night Dr. Wentworth came over + spent some time and then we went over to his home + took tea + spent the evening. Came back home about nine.

Friday 25th. Nothing special today. Very hot. Have done about as usual. In the afternoon Baldwin family came over + soon after bro Gibson and left before ten. Evening at home. Had a sweet time at the family altar as we usually do. O how precious to commune with God + hold conscious fellowship with the Son + feel the Assurance of the Spirit. Praise the Lord for all his goodness to me + the sons of men.

Saturday 26. This forenoon wrote + sealed a letter to Bro Cunningham. Took a Lunch at Bro. Gibson's at twelve, then went with him to the boat which we entered + were soon on our way for Ngu Kiu + Quenang [?].

After we left the Boat went through a village where Bro Gibson [93] talked to the people that gathered about us about their sins +c making I trust a good impression. We took a circuitous course + getting a little out of the way had to pull off our shoes + stockings and wade through a stream swollen by iaie rains. We met Young Mi who had come to meet us and welcome us to his house where we were entertained as well as he was able. We passed the night very comfortably. Bro Gibson spent the evening in hearing the brethren read from the scriptures what they have been learning since he was last up there. I believe he thinks they have done very well. We had singing + praying at the beginning + read. After we went to bed some of the brethren kept on singing under much excitement. The next morning some of them said they got so excited by the singing + praying they could not sleep.

Sunday May 27th. This morning arose about 7 o'clock, washed + dressed + breakfasted. Had prayers with the few brethren gathered in then started for Que Hung. We got there at 9 o'clock. Stayed a few moments + drank some tea then left Young Mi to talk + read + pray with them till we came back, taking one of the brethren as a guide in search of a stranger [94] some two miles. He was not at home but gone to the City with a load of oil. We came back back [sic] hot + tired. Bro Gibson commenced religious exercises + kept them up till past 12 o'clock when we came back to Young Mi + had like services - singing prayer preaching + class meeting. One woman spoke with her baby slung on her back. Other little boys were running around there stark naked.

We left about 4 P.M. Got to our boat about 5 + after a rapid descent on the swollen water of the Min reached home about 1/2 past 6 P.M. Found all well. Glad to be home with my family +c. Eve at home.

Monday 28th. My teacher sent word by Baldwins that he had business + could not come today. This forenoon Dr Wentworth called in while I was settling with my Cook. After I was through a little while Gibson came; we talked away about this + that till Wentworth left + Gibson left soon after. I read some + lay down some till Gibson made another call + stayed an hour or more talking over old school day times + manners. This Afternoon, in Com-[95]pany with Gibson, Smith + Collins of Shanghai went in search of some sugar till we found some which we bought. I took one basket, Gibson one + Smith three. Came home + paid the man the money for sugar.

This evening at home.

Tuesday 29th. Today has passed pleasantly. Read some this forenoon + slept some. About one went over to Baldwin's. Heard of a truth that a thief broke into their yard last night + stole some things from their wash room. He cut through the mud wall. Studied this afternoon. Towards night we were favored with a call from the captain of the

“American Man of War” “John Adams” and Captain Walbuck in their uniform. The Lieutenant’s name is Stone. The vessel in which they came will stay 2, 3, or 4 months. They were very polite and strongly invited us to go and see them on board their Boat. May the Lord Bless them + their crew. Eve at home.

May Wednesday 30th. Have been at home mostly today.

This afternoon about 1/2 past 1 o’clock Dr Lansdale of the USN ship “John Adams” with Mr. Wilber [Weller?] called a few moments. Eve went to the weekly prayer meeting. It was attended by all the Mission + several others.

[96] **May 31st.** This closes the month + is the last day of spring.

This forenoon sent a letter to the office for Bishop Baker. At 10 A.M. went to the regular monthly Mission business meeting to give in my accounts.

Bro Baldwin + wife took dinner with us. After dinner in company with Baldwin + Gibson out in search of more sugar; found some. Proceeded to Ta Ting [?] with Gibson. He talked to the people a large company coming in. We distributed some books, which they received gladly.

Coming back we had our sugar weighed + put outside + marked; I took one basket.

Took supper at Baldwin’s + spent the evening.

[97] **June 1st 1860** Thus commences summer in good earnest. This and the 2nd, 3rd + 4th days of the month have passed as usual. Study walking + play + reading passes away day after [day] in rapid succession. Saturday night Mary + I took a long walk and she has been very unwell since. Sunday + Monday she was mostly confined to her bed.

Sunday at 5 o’clock P.M. I preached in English for Bro. Gibson from 2 Cor 5th, 15th. The Lord gave me Freedom of utterance and I hope a good impression was made.

June Monday 5th. Mary has been a little better today but has not sat up any length of time.

This afternoon Miss Sallie came in and offered to stay with my wife if I desire to go into the city to attend the Monthly Covenant of prayer for the Conversion of the World. I accepted the offer, went + had I trust a profitable meeting. After meeting went over to Mrs. Smith’s + took some cloth + brought home with me 14 yds at 42 cts a yard for some coats.

Went to Dr Gibson and got a syringe tonight. Mary better at bed time.

[98] **Wednesday June 6th.** Today have been at home + usually employed while not waiting on Mary who continues sick – not so sick perhaps as weak. Mrs Baldwin, Mrs Gibson + Miss Buelak have called + Gibson himself.

Thursday 7th. Today have been at home in the forenoon till 11 when I went to Qongtan [?] to see to the preaching a little. Young Mi was there + Tukait [?], the former had preached + the latter was preaching when I went in. Coming back I called to look at a book case but did not buy. Saw a miserable beggar with no feet rolling like a pig in the dirty street up in the Fish Market besmeared with dirt. Tailor came today to make me some clothes. This is about all. Home this Eve.

Mary some better today + this Eve.

Friday June 8th. Today have been at home most of the time studying + taking care of Mary who is slowly amending. Mrs. Baldwin, Mr + Mrs Wentworth + Mr + Mrs Gibson have called today. I went to Baldwin's towards night to get some coat patterns + buttons. Was introduced [99] there to Dr. Gibbs of the US Navy ship "John Adams". He takes tea at Baldwin's I believe. And stays over night.

9th Saturday As usual at home. Some trials with my servants. Mary some better. Teacher here in forenoon. Tailor all day here. Class meeting Eve.

Sunday 10th. Today at home with Mary. Did not attend church at all. Read some. Headache some. Mary not much better till towards night and in the evening. Mrs. Gibson called in the forenoon.

Monday 11th. At home all day. Teacher not come. Mary some better. Came to the breakfast dinner + supper table. I fear has done too much.

Dr Wentworth called with a brother of Wilbur Fisk Watkins, a former friend + schoolmate. He resembles his brother but little save in size + complexion. Mr Milne called on his way to Pomisang.

Tuesday 12th. Today at home as usual. Teacher came + I studied with him. Read some in Stevens' History of Methodism.

[100] **June Saturday 22nd.** The past 10 days have gone about the same as all others here with me. Have [been] at home most of the time with my lady who is confined to her bed at this time but evidently improving. Last Sabbath I preached in English from "Thou God Trust Me". Thursday went to "Tating". Called on bro Barnes [Burnes?] + attended the preaching in Chinese + in the evening attended the prayer Meeting at the "Heavenly Rest Church".

During the past week in the day time there has been an [sic] continual tumult of noise – screaming + beating of gongs occasioned by Celebrating a feast called Feast of the Dragon Boats. It is really tiresome to hear the uproar.

[101]

Nov 19th 1860

During the long summer months I have kept no diary. When last wrote Mary was sick. She has now recovered. I have spent a large share of my time in studying. I have took [sic] my regular turn at the appointments. Have been in the country 3 times - once alone!

On the 14th Inst commenced reading the scriptures in Chinese with my servants at morning prayers. Also sometime in August commenced saying the Lord's Prayer with them. I am now reading Matthew by course and committing it by sight to memory. Am encouraged to persevere in my work.

Today attended the regular Chinese Monthly Concert for prayer at Ching Sung-tong [?]. Beside Martins Court [?] there were present Gibson - Pete Doolittle Baldwin C.C. Wooden Mrs B - D. + W. and several Baldwins. Tonight [?????] is mending my stockings. What a good wife.¹

[102] **20th Nov.** Took my usual lesson in Chinese. Twice went to my new house that is building. Once went and examined Bro Baldwin's house of which I have the charge while he is gone to Amoy for the health of his wife.

This afternoon Bro Doolittle and wife gave us a call. Stayed to tea and spent the evening.

21st. This morning heard the firing of cannon and on inquiring of Bro Gibson ascertained that each gun was the death knell of a man who was beheaded. It seems that the Mandarins have at last captured several "Pirates" and taken some two or three hundred prisoners whom they have executed more or less. Bro G. and myself went down to the Big Bridge which was crowded with people and we then saw a large number of the prisoners bound in a cruel manner and unclothed save a piece of coarse matting in front. We saw the heads of 5 decapitated men. My heart sick[103]ened + I almost fainted at the horrible sight. I can no longer believe the Chinese are good executioners. Some of the heads looked as if several blows were struck before they were severed from the body. There were many soldiers with guns swords spears + knives - horrible instruments of death - old, rusty + dull. While there, orders were given for the company of soldiers + prisoners to march into the city where the further work of death was done + will be done. One man we saw was dead + carried along as you would the body of a hog that had died with the blind staggers. Came home wiser and more sorrowful than when I went. Saw what would be the fate of us foreigners if the authorities could carry out what they would be glad to do. Prayer meeting Eve.

¹ *Transcriber's Note: Diagonally written across this entire page, in large letters, is written the following sentence: "I have suffered some with sore eyes."*

22nd. Today besides my other duties of writing letters in answer to Baldwin's from Amoy +c went to Ta Ting. Young Mi + Li Tang preached. The streets were not crowded + quiet. On my [104] way back stopped and bought some cotton cloth and examined a specimen of satin for a vest. It did not quite suit me.

23rd. Today have sent a letter to the "Vermont Christian Messenger", one to Baldwin and forwarded another + four papers to him from America. Have taken my lesson in Chinese and done some writing on a sermon. Dr. Gibson took dinner with us today. He is not improving much in health. He came here last April soon after my arrival – was taken sick in July or Aug. with the diarrhea and has not recovered yet. – is a bro of Gibson of the Mission and is a member of the Class here if there is any. Eve at home. Mary has been reading to me from the Life of Jacob Guber [?], a work just out.

Trusting in God I am strong.

[105] **24th.** Today have been at home most of the time studying and writing. Once in the forenoon went to see Dr. Gibson + also once in the afternoon but he was not in his room either time.

This evening the young ladies came in to class but as no one else came we had none. Dr Wentworth's people are sick, bro Gibson is in the country, C.C. Baldwin went up with him today, bro S.L. Baldwin is yet at Amoy. All our meetings are thinly attended now.

Today the weather has been very chilly + we have had a fire in the parlor where we have sat most of the time. It is fifteen months today since my marriage.

Sunday 25th. Today have had no service in Chinese to attend to being my day to preach in English which I did at 4 o'clock P.M. at "TunQing Tong" to a small congregation from Rev 3.18. Of the foreign community besides missionaries Mssrs. Medhurst, Milne, Gregory, Dum, Nielson, + Miller were present. Eve at home. Mary read from the life of J. Gruber. We sung and prayed and were blessed of God to whom be praise for this sabbath day.

[106] **Monday 26th.** Today have been at home studying and doing some little house jobs. Set up a stove in the study. Engaged a Chinese Blacksmith to make a stove out of some sheet iron I have in the form of stove pipe which was useless to me. Fixed the Back up [?] +c. Took tea and spent the evening at Bro. Gibson's. Dr. Gibson took dinner with us and stayed the afternoon out. He is not just so well today.

Tuesday 27th. This forenoon first went to see Dr. Gibson second with bro Gibson called at Dr Wentworth's to agree about some repairs on the preaching house visited for our service at Ngû K'ong which we soon did.

At 1/2 past 11 o'clock started with Gibson by boat for that place with the carpenter to give him directions how to make the repairs. Arrived at Ngû K'ong about 2 o'clock did our business there and started home at 1/2 past 3 o'clock. Got home about six P.M. somewhat tired.

[107] **Wednesday 28th.** Today have been at home most of the time. In the morning called on Dr. Gibson. He put a solution in my eye which has been sore for some weeks. Also went over to see Baldwin's house which is left in my charge. Had a hard lesson in Chinese. Read in the *Coloquial and Character*. Spent some time in teaching my Table Boy how to do his work. We have had him but a short time and is the third Boy we have had since we have kept house.

This eve went to the prayer meeting. No one but the family were present but myself [?]. Bro. Gibson read a chapter, we sung, I prayed and I soon came home.

Thursday 29th. Today in the forenoon called at Dr Gibson's room but he was not in. Took my regular turn at Tâ Ting today and at T'ung Qing this evening. Before supper went to bro Gibsons and saw the Dr. Bro. Gibson came today for two dollars from Baldwin for keeping his Chinese girl or having it kept. [?] ²

[108] **Friday Nov. 30th.** This is the last day of the month. We had our Mission Meeting at Dr. Wentworth by his request. Got through about 12 o'clock after a pleasant session. I came home then by way of Gibson's and found Mrs. Smith of the city + Mrs. Hartwell of the same place with their babies + nurses. They stayed to dinner and most of the Afternoon. Today payed off my workmen. Payed Gibson \$14.34 on debt. The new stove came today and gives very good satisfaction. Received a letter from Mr Pendleton of Shanghai, former Mate of the ship on which we sailed from N. York. His health is not as good as formerly – is living at Mr + Mrs Yates – all of the people up there are very well – desires to hear from us. Went to see the blacksmith just at night to get a little change in the stove pipe.

Evening at home.

Saturday Dec 1st 1860. This forenoon called on the doctor after doing some work about the house. Took my usual lesson in Chinese. Afternoon Mary and I in company with Bro. [109] Gibson + family took a long trip for the exercise and pleasure. We went off south of the compound across pretty fields, by villages, over hills, through olive groves till we came to the famous falls – a little rill of water leaping and running down over rocks for the side of a hill, high but not very beautiful.

² *Transcriber's Note: Diagonally across the bottom of this page, in large letters, is written the following: "Miss Sallie came in this evening."*

We took another route home after biting on some cake + fruit we took with us. Came by a beautiful orange orchard. The fruit was just yellow and looked delicious. Came home about dark, tired. Bro. Gibson + wife came to class and that was all. I read a Psalm, sung, and he prayed and they went home.

Today also sent a note to Hedger and a letter Per Courier to Pendleton of Shanghai. Hedger sent in his bill after deducting an order I sent for \$7.00 which received from Baldwin. The whole amount was \$26.25 - 7 = \$19.35. The above is what I have traded with him since I came into the place during the last 8 months.

[110] **Sunday Dec 2nd.** Have had the charge of the services at T'ung Eng Tong today. In the forenoon Po Mi preached from the Third Chapter of Luke. Class meeting after preaching. Afternoon Sunday School.

At four o'clock P.M. Dr Wentworth preached in English from 1st John 2nd Chapt 15, 16, + 17th verses.

Evening at home, Mary read from Jacob Gruber's life.

Monday Dec 3rd. This morning went down to Hedgers and paid my bill. Paid one dollar to Ahok for a knife bought Saturday. Am in debt to no one now but Baldwin a few dollars.

This afternoon bro Baldwin came to town leaving his wife at the Anchorage in a very poor state of health. There is but little or no hope of her recovering in his or my mind this side of the ocean. Baldwin has gone back to the Anchorage to get her. They will come up tomorrow, I suppose. His coming prevented me from going to the monthly concert at Rev. C.C. Baldwin's at Po Mi Sang.

[111] Today received a list of receipts and a bill of lading of goods bought in + shipped from N. York in the "Levanter" about the first of Sept from Bro. Terry. The mail brought us no letters this time.

Eve at home.

[Vol 1 Part 6: Dec 4th, 1860 – Sept 30th, 1861]

Tuesday Dec 4th. Today have been at home. Studied as usual. At about 1/2 past 2 P.M. Bro. Baldwin + wife came to our house from the Anchorage. Mrs. B— looks better than when she went to Amoy but it is feared she will not be permanently restored in FuhChau. They will stay a day or two. In the evening with Baldwin called all round.

Wednesday Dec 5th 1860. Also at home today except going to Baldwin's house with him a little while. In the evening went to + led the prayer meeting. Mrs. Woodin called on us and also Mrs. Gouverneur. Mr Milne took tea with us.

Thursday 6th. At home and away from home. Gibson called a Mission Meeting at Dr Wentworth's to settle some affairs. [112] Came home, went to bro Gibson's for pinchers to unscrew a lamp fixing. Dr. Gibson put a weak solution in my eye which is improving. Today the Baldwins went into their own house to live. Mary + I called on them towards night. This evening at home.

Friday 7th. This morning called on bro. Baldwin and paid him \$2.25, his due. Called before this on Dr Wentworth and took \$20.00 in advance of salary. Took my regular lesson in Chinese. Went to my new house and had some changes made in the location of the doors. Towards night went again and met Dr. Wentworth there + had a long talk with him about matters in general. After supper + prayers called at bro Gibson's to find out what time the tide serves tomorrow as it is my regular turn to the country. Bro. Gibson proposed as he goes up next Sunday to attend the Quarterly Meeting, that I wait and go up with him then. Young Mi being present assented and and [sic] so I shall wait and accompany Gibson.

Evening some headache. I fear I am getting worldly.

[113] **Saturday 8th.** In forenoon studied as usual my Chinese lesson. Called at my new house. Afterwards called on Baldwin and had a long talk with him on matters in general. Read some in Macaulay's History of Eng.

Toward [sic] Mary and I took a walk over to the old British Cemetery + from there to the Mission Cemetery, found Baldwin there. After a little Milne came.

This evening no one came to Class but Baldwin. Gibson's people went out to dine on his and Gregory's Birthday.

Sunday 9th. Today did not go to my country for reasons before mentioned. In the morning went to T'ung Ang Tong.¹ Baldwin preached

¹ *Transcriber's Note: Penmanship is very clear here. I assume this to be the correct spelling.*
C.R. Martin Diary, Volume 1 Part 6 Page 1

his first sermon in Chinese. The rest of the day was at home till four P.M. when I went to the English Service. Bro Baldwin preached from 2nd Kings 6. 16. It was an extempore discourse and produced an effect. After meeting he called at my house. Evening at home. Mary + I read in "Gruber's Life".

The past few days have been exceedingly lovely. The sun has shone in beauty, it has been neither too hot nor too cold, just comfortable without a fire. Such is work in FuhChau.

[114] **Monday 10th.** Today has been a damp drizzly one + towards night chilly. The masons have not worked on my house. I think it is the first day they have come by since they commenced it unless it was when they were laying the stone foundation. No rain has fallen on the brick work before today + but a little today.

Have read in Macaulay, studied +c. Afternoon called on Baldwin's. Put some hinges on a box for Mrs Baldwin for which she gave me a night shirt with the name of Geo. Smith on it. Today Gibson's woman came with another who wished us to engage her. Have not yet decided to do so but presume we shall. She has been with Mrs Hartwell 5 years and knows all about the work to be done. This evening at home; do not feel very well in body. Had a sweet lesson in family prayer. Praise the Lord for his near approach to my soul.

Tuesday 11th. This morning received a note from bro Gibson that the doctor intends to return to America by the "Nabob". Soon after I called on Gibson's people and from there went to Baldwin's. Spoke to them of the only chance to get Mrs. Baldwin to America before next [115] summer and that it would be perilous to wait so long. Baldwin left soon to see about the chances and the passage. In an hour or two a Mission Meeting was called in which Bro. Baldwin's intended return to America was approved of and he was authorized to get a passage on the "Nabob" which he will do in a day or two. This afternoon have been assisting Baldwin in packing some things after calling with him at Dr. Wentworth + the young ladies.

Evening also at Baldwin's assisting in packing his books.

Wednesday 12th. Today has been rather cool but pleasant. In the morning went over and assisted Baldwin – came back about 11 o'clock and took my lesson in Chinese. After dinner went to Baldwin's again and worked the rest of the day. One thing I did was to put a matting around a carpet to go to Amoy. Mary also spent the afternoon in working for Mrs B—. This evening went to Gibson's to prayer meeting but there was none so I came back and spent the evening with Mollie - read a chapt in Gruber. Am tired in body but have power in my soul.

[116] **Thursday 13th.** This morning before I was dressed received the following note. My dear Mr. Martin, Will you kindly come in? The Dr. has just passed away to his eternal home.

Yours +c,

E. C. Gibson

I soon dressed and went over to assist in laying out the body of the deceased yet warm in his blood. He was buried at sunset in the Mission Cemetery followed there from the house of his brother Rev Gibson's by nearly the whole of the foreign community. Bro. Baldwin officiated in the religious services consisting of a few pertinent remarks then a short prayer at the house and the Burial Service at the grave. Dr. Gibson's stay among us has been brief and mingled constantly with sickness. He gained the esteem of all who knew him and especially those with whom he associated the most. He was a Christian and more than in name. He adorned his profession with a well ordered walk and Godly conversation. His Bro. Otis deeply mourns his loss as will his distant friends.

As a Class we shall miss him, as a [117] community his loss will not soon be made up. His soul is freed from pain and Heaven contains another jewel to deck the "Saviour's Brow".

Most of the day I have been busy in packing up Baldwin's goods. They are nearly ready to be shipped. This evening at home, very tired, and shall sleep soundly by the blessing of God. Baldwins at our house. He lead in our devotions with some unction.

Friday 14th. Today have been busy with Baldwin's affairs in connexion with my own. All of their goods that they take with them are gone down to the ship. They have word now not to go down themselves till Monday.

Just at night called in to see bro. Gibson. Found him in low spirits. Mrs. G is sick today. Has not been dressed. Mary is not well; did not come out to tea though Mr. Milne was present. Today the following persons were present to say good by to our friends. CC Baldwin, Mr + Mrs Geo Smith, Mrs Hartwell + Mr Gregory. Tonight at home.

[118] **Saturday 15th.** Today have been at home most of the time. Baldwin's people did not go down to the ship today as they expected having had orders not to till morning. Have done some studying + writing. Have settled up my accounts with Baldwin and made my arrangements with him for the future.

Sunday 16th. Today went to Ching Sing Tong and met the brethren. Lo Ting preached from Matt. 25th 13 first verses. After preaching had the Class Meeting in which I tried to talk a little. This morning sent a circular to the American Community announcing that Bro. Baldwin would preach the funeral sermon of Dr. Gibson in our Church at 4 o'clock. At the time of service there was quite a large audience for the place. The text was "Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord +c". It was not a great sermon

but full of thought and calculated to impress the hearers favorably. May it be a word in lesson to those who are living in the world without help in God. Mr. Moore called after service. [119] In the evening several of the Po Ni Sang Brethren came in with most of our Mission and we had sort of a goodbye prayer meeting. Mr Doolittle led the meeting. It was profitable and interesting. Bro Baldwin spoke of his sorrow in leaving the mission and hoped to return in due time.

Monday 17th. This morning at an early hour we woke up, had breakfast, and by 8 o'clock had the Baldwins started for the Anchorage. Dr. Wentworth and I went down with them in Sloan's house Boat. Got to the Anchorage at 1/2 past 10, took a lunch, assisted them in nailing up a broken trunk, and bade them goodbye + with the Capt. whose name is Baxter came to town where we arrived at 3 o'clock or a little previous. Took dinner with Mary at Dr. Wentworth's. Came home, sent a package to the Capt. at Sloan's for Baldwin. Then went with Dr. Wentworth to the Chinese Monthly Concert at Ru Chin Tong. All the Po Mi Sang missionaries were there, Mrs Doolittle + Woodin. Came home, took supper, prayed. Gibson + wife came in + spent the Eve.

[120] **Tuesday 18th.** Today at 1/2 past 10 o'clock Bro. B's house was opened, a company of the foreign community began to collect, and, the elder Hedger acting as Auctioneer, his furniture, crockery +c were sold. His things went very cheap. I bought a Rocking Chair for \$3.25, a spittoon for 1.25, table mats for 100 [????] for \$2.00. I had charge somewhat of the keys of the house and was busy all day in gathering things removed from the house. This evening at home + returned early with a severe headache and tired. Just at night got a note from Baldwin written in the morning at 9 o'clock. The ship was then aground below Dobius [?]. I understand she got off at 11 o'clock.

Wednesday 19th. My teacher did not make his appearance today but the mail did, bringing news from home, so I have had plenty to do. Sent Baldwin's mail to him per Hedge + Ci. Read the home letters, one from Mother Allen, one from Father Allen, + one from Lucius. Finished writing an Obituary notice of Dr. Gibson's death for the A + journal + Northern Advertiser [?]. Wrote a letter to Lucius. Mr Dunn came and I went with him to assist in getting Baldwin's piano out of his house.

[121] Evening went to the prayer meeting a[t] Bro. Gibson's. All were there but Mary + Mrs Wentworth. Got a note from Baldwin. At 2 o'clock Wednesday morning they took up anchors and by 8 A.M. were safely at Sharps Peak [Ships Park?] in hopes to get out to sea by night.

Thursday 20th. Today in forenoon was busy writing till 1/2 10 o'clock when I went to Tâ Ting. Lotang [?] preached and after a while got the attention of a few of his hearers. I waited an hour and a half and then

came home leaving him to finish when he should get ready. Called on my way back at a shop or two, was cordially treated, got home at 2 o'clock. Took dinner, took a lesson.

Bro Gibson called in + previously to him Dr. Wentworth for some stove pipe which he found in the Dispensary. Eve at home busy in writing and in teaching the boys that came in to resume their studies. Got a letter from Baldwin written this [???] + 3 o'clock. Still at Ship Park [?]. All well.

Friday 21st. Today have been writing letters to Terry and on my sermon for Sunday. Wentworth came in. The boys came in in the evening. At home.

[122] **Saturday 22nd.** Today have been busy in my study. Took my lesson with my teacher but spent most of the time in writing a sermon for the English service tomorrow evening. Went to my new house several times to see to the workmen. Evening Bro. Gibson and wife came to Class Meeting but as they were all who came we had none. Before supper Miss Bullak called for some "Box". After her Miss Sollin came in for a call.

Sunday 23rd. Attended the morning service at Gunding Gong [?]. Bro. Gibson preached a short sermon. Finished my sermon before dinner + preached or read it with some liberty + I trust to profit. My subject was the "Beloved Disciple", text John 21. Chapt 20, 21 + 22 verses. Eve at home. Mary read from Grubers Life.

Monday 24. This [morning] Wentworth sent his Coolie and with mine to the furnace down to the church. I saw to its putting up and made a fire in it. The young men and ladies trimmed [?] the church for Christmas. I study as usual and look after my house.

[123] **25th Christmas.** Chinese service at Tun Ang Tong at 1/2 past 9 o'clock. Bro. Gibson preached. The boys trimmed their part of the building last evening and it was well done for them.

At 11 o'clock there was a service of the Church of England – Parson Smith. About 40 were present. He preached from "And there was no room for him in the Inn" - A very good discourse, simple + practical. He gave the merchants good advice – cautioned them about celebrating the feast with moroseness on one hand nor boisterous levity on the other.

The Brethren on this side and some from the country had a prayer meeting a[t] 3 P.M. and at night a sort of a feast.

This evening according to invitation at 1/2 past 6 o'clock went to the Old British Consulate and took dinner and spent the evening with Mr Gregory, an assistant interpreter in the office. There were sixteen of us, all Missionaries of our side and the other, Mr. Nichols burrell [?].

We came home at 1/2 past 11 o'clock. Passed Fussill's. They were having high times screaming, jumping and I know not what else more Barbarous there the Chinese Heathen-beasts. Did not sleep much.

[124] **Wednesday 26th.** Today have not felt very well in body. Took my lesson in the Coloquial. Called on Mrs Gibson, Bro. G. having gone into the country.

In the evening at the prayer meeting of the Mission.

Thursday 27th. Studied as usual. Went to Tâ Ting Quong Mi preached. Looked after my house. In the evening led the prayer meeting at Tun Ang Tong. Pleasant day, sunny + warm.

Friday 28th. Lovely, sunshiny day. Studied, visited my house. Towards night Mrs Gibson came in and before she left Mr Nichols came in and took tea with us and spent the evening. Prayed with us before he left. This young man is Agent in China for a firm in Boston. He has been out here two years.

Saturday 29th. Today I have spent in study and business about home. Gibson called about noon, having got home last evening. After dinner Mr. + Mrs. Wentworth made a short call. (A fine day.)

Today the masons commenced the wall for my Kitchen 12 by 15 ft. The boys came in + took their lessons tonight. So ends anoth-[125]er week – the last whole week of the year 1860. A circular from Shanghai was handed in tonight announcing a series of extra religious exercises to be observed up there in connexion with other parts of the world, commencing on the 6th of Jan. We may have something of that kind down here in this heathenish place. We need them for ourselves as well as for others. I fear if we were to be weighed in the balance we should be fearfully wanting.

Sunday 30th. Today took the Tung Ang appointment forenoon + afternoon. Po Mi preached for me.

At 11 A.M. went to the English Episcopal service and gained in the process. The Parson preached from "Misery + truth have met together +c".

Evening at home. Mary read from "The Itinerant Sick".

Monday 31st. This is the last day of the year 1860. Time quickly flies. Spent the forenoon from 10 o'clock in a Mission Meeting at Gibson's. Peace!

Afternoon settled up my affairs. Went [126] with Gibson and settles the measurement of the land for the Asylum on Dr. Wentworth's land back of his house. Brought from bro. Gibson's some Nitrate of Silver for my eyes, which are getting worse again.

Evening at home - boys came in to study.

Tuesday Jan. 1st 1861

A Happy New Year !!

Stayed at home in the forenoon and received calls with Mary according to a custom introduced here from the New York custom.

Afternoon went and made calls at Po Ma Sang an[d] Mrs Arthur Smith, Mrs. Gouverneur, then on all the Mission except Mrs Wentworth, she being too tired to receive more calls.

Spent the evening very pleasantly at Mr. Milne's with quite a large company.

The following gentlemen called:

J.H. Nichols	Wm. Gregory	Rev. Wm. J. Smith
George F. Weller	Chas. Carroll	Walter Medhurst
W.C. Milne	M. Daly + J.M. Mure	Lieut. Hallowes
	Maynard + Nays	

[127] The above list is exclusive of all Missionaries.

Today commenced praying with my servants wholly in Chinese. May God help me to continue it for many years to come.

Jan 2nd. This morning was about home - in the afternoon went to Hedge and Co.'s and collected an order of \$4.75 for Bro. Baldwin - found that Dr. Wentworth had paid my bill - came home and paid him the whole of Bro. Baldwin's due, amounting to \$15.62. - This evening attended the prayer meeting at Bro. Gibson's - Mary, also, took the chair and went - found quite a goodly number there - Rev. George Smith from the City with his wife was there, and he read the fifth chapter of Eph. - This evening on returning home found my eyes very bad - after washing them out went to bed, but they ached so badly, was obliged to get up and wash them again before I could sleep-

Today as I was returning from Hedge's purchased three apples for half a dollar. They were very mellow and looked very much like some we have at home, though I fancy we should think them rather expensive at that price.

This morning Mr. Gregory called with Mr. Ennis, a Scotchman, +c. +c. +c.

[128] **Jan. 3rd.** Today, in the morning about home as usual - in the forenoon went to Pong - tan. My eyes have ben so bad have not been able to study. In the evening two of the boys came in to study.

Friday 4th. This morning²

Feb Wednesday 9th. Mary gave birth to a son - her first born.³ Thus has God increased our responsibility + cares. May we have an increase of grace to meet these things and glorify God in their use.

[129] **Wednesday Feb 18th 1861** For more than a month past my eyes have been so sore the doctor has refused to let me use them in reading or writing much. I have not been able to keep up with the time. The[y] are some better now + I hope will soon be well. I will here say that for the past month I have been out but a little. Have not been able to attend to my appointments except occasionally. On the last day of last month I received my work for the coming year as follows:

Ato + Kuang Ing Chang = Week Days

Ching Hang Tong + Tring Ang Tong Alternate at on Sundays. I am in hopes to be able to commence anew my work soon.

Tuesday Feb 19th. Have been at home till 3 o'clock P.M. when I went to Quang Ing Chang. I commenced going to my appointments yesterday for the first [time] after a long interval caused by sore eyes. Hope to be able to keep it up every day hereafter. Mrs. Smith of the City + Miss Sallie called today. Bought some preserved fruit at Ahok's for Mary.

Evening at home as usual.

[130] **1861**

Sept 13th. During the spring and the hot summer of this year have not been very actively engaged in any work save studying the language. My eyes that were sore in the spring for a long time are now quite strong again. Have had an attack of diarrhea this past summer + during the past month a severe attack of "Cholera Morbus" which brought me very low, but by the blessing of God I have survived and at this present time am in comfortable health and begin to feel much stronger for my future employment. Yesterday went into the country to see if the house for

² *Transcriber's Note: The writing stops abruptly here, and a space was left in the diary. Rev. Martin evidently intended to fill this in later, but never did. Probably the problem with his eyes, mentioned below, was the cause. The diary resumes with Feb Wednesday 9th.*

³ *Transcriber's Note: Edward Homer Martin, "Eddie".*

worship at Que-Xung was ready for dedication; found it still unfinished. On my way home met a half dozen hunters + bought of them for 300 cash a nice fat partridge. Going up tied my feet on a chain pump with a man who was working one all alone. I could not keep up with it. I think the man made it turn very fast just to better me. It was fun for him. On my way back he tried to get me on again but I refused on the principle that a burnt child dreads the fire. Got home at 8 P.M. Today studied chinese – took dinner at the Miss Warlstron [?]. Mrs. Hartwell + her children went home today, she + they having stopped with us a few days past.

[131] **Sept 14th.** The day has passed away in study + reading. Towards night went to the street and got into conversation with the Chinese – had quite a long talk with them – went into a Budhist Temple + came home by way of the hill. Evening at home.

15th Sunday. Pleasant + warm. Took charge of the meeting at Tung Ang Tong. A[t] 9 A.M. Kin Tiak preached. Afternoon led the Sunday School. At 5 P.M. attended the English service. Parson Smith preached from “Vanity of vanities saith the preacher all is vanity”. Evening at home. Mary + myself both have hard colds + also Eddie.

16th. At home as usual studying + reading. Towards night went to the street + had a religious talk. Called at Ahugs and bought two glass canisters for 40 cts. Word came tonight that the Cathay or “Kothay” had put in to Amoy and landed her passengers. So we may expect Bros Maclay + Sites soon.

17th. Spent the day in my studies reading and to fixing up some things about the house.

Evening Mr. Dodds of the Gun Boat “Hardy” took tea with us + spent the evening. Called in to Bro. Gibson a few minutes. He is sick.

[132]

Sept. 1861

18th. Today at home as usual. This evening This evening Mr. Doods [?] took tea with us and we all went to the prayer-meeting. It was led by bro. Burns. Dr. Wentworth was away down the river.

19th. Today started for the Anchorage to meet our expected missionaries Bro’s Maclay + Sites with their families; found them just arrived at Russell + Co’s. Had a happy meeting with them – all well. Took Bro + Sis Sites home with me. Am pleased with their appearance. God bless them + spare their precious lives to us + the Church. Towards night went with bro Sites to the Anchorage for their things from the steamer. Went in Sloan’s Boat. Were successful. Took a note to Mrs. Dobie for Dr Wentworth and in answer got some charcoal birds fm [?]

C.R. Martin Diary, Volume 1 Part 6 Page 9

him. Arrived home at about 11 o'clock P.M. – Got unexpected cask of valuables from our friends in Vermont put in care of Bro. Maclay.

20th. Today have been busy in seeing to the transportation of the goods, got last night, from Sloan's to the houses of our friends, have done little else. Just at nightfall tried to get some coffee at Ahok's but he had none.

[133] **21st.** At home studying, writing and visiting with those who called from Po Ma Sang. Evening at home.

22nd Sunday. Very windy with some rain. Attended the two Chinese services at Tung Ang Tong and the English service at five P.M. Bro Maclay preached in the morning with ease from Matt. 5th. Evening called to see bro Gibson – some better but still weak. After tea went into the parlor and Bro. Sites + wife joined with us in reading, singing + praying. How refreshing was the hour, how good to hear the voice of woman at the the [sic] throne of grace, how very pleased indeed with our new friends. Bro. Sites is 30 years of age; Sister Sites 22. They seem like the children of God. May they long live here to preach Jesus + him crucified [?].

23d. Have been at home studying busily and assisting our friend Sites + wife. Day rainy + disagreeable.

24th. In forenoon studied. In afternoon went to the street. Took my stand by the Entering in of a shop by the permission of the keeper + talked to the people as best I could. Came home + found a cabinet maker, engaged him to make some articles for bro Sites. Bro Doods came in + took tea with us + spent the evening.

[134] **25th.** Today at home attending to my usual duties of studying, reading +c. Cabinet maker came and took the measure of the articles to be made for bro. Sites viz 2 Wardrobes for \$16.00, 1 Sideboard for \$8.00, a wash stand for \$3.00 and a clothes rack thrown in to the bargain.

This evening attended the regular prayer meeting at bro. Gibson's. Dr Wentworth led the meeting – dry. Took 3 pills on going to bed. Slept soundly.

26th. Today not feeling very well. Took six pills in addition to the three last night. They don't seem to have much effect save to make me sickish. Still I have studied my lesson in Chinese. This morning commenced reading the gospel of Luke with my servants at prayers having finished Mark. This evening at home.

27th. This morning felt badly indeed in body. Took a dose of oil to carry off the effect of the pills of yesterday. Did not study much, lay down part

of the time. At two we all went to the young ladies' to dinner. Rev. C.C. Baldwin + wife + Sarah were also there. Towards night took a walk on the hill, came home, took a light supper, had prayers in the parlor, read to the ladies from the Repository. Retired at 9 o'clock.

[135] **28th.** Today in company with bro Gibson went to Inn Kang, found the Dr Wentworth there. Left home about 1 o'clock P.M., arrived at dark. Stayed at that place over night. Before retiring had prayers in Chinese. Bro's Kim Tark + Yong Mi leading in prayer. Rested well.

29th. Up early, dressed, washed, took breakfast, morning prayers by bro Gibson, at 8 o'clock started for Que Hung. The walk was pleasantly accomplished in an hour. Here we held important religious services. Dr Wentworth dedicated the New Chapel to the service of God, bro Gibson baptised an elderly lady + administered the communion to about forty worshippers of Jesus. After a short intermission Kim Tark preached from the 22 of Matt. At one o'clock left for the boat, arrived there at 3 o'clock, at at [sic] home about half past 4 o'clock, found all well. Had our regular family prayer meeting in the evening. Have much to be grateful for to our Heavenly Father who I trust is leading me along by his unseen hand.

30th. Today attended the Mission Meeting held at Dr. Wentworth's. It passed off very pleasantly. Adjourned to meet again on next Wednesday to finish up some unfinished business. Afternoon studied. Evening Schuck called on us and spent an hour or so.

[Vol 1 Part 7: Oct 1st, 1861 – Dec 31st, 1861]

Oct. 1861

1st. Today at home. Mail came in, got a letter from bro. Baldwin, one from Mary's father + Mother + Edward. All well.

2nd. Today attended the adjourned Mission Meeting at Dr Wentworth's. Matters concerning the Asylum, Press, and Our Work were freely discussed + arranged.

Just at night called with Mary at Bro. Maclay's. Went to the Prayer Meeting at Gibson's. Bro Dodds of the Gun Boat "Hardy" brought along with him one of the engineers whose parents are Wesleyans. He seems very well disposed.

3d. Today teacher did not come because of a lame hand. Read the papers +c. At 11 o'clock walked to Tâ Ting, Lo Tang preached to a very good audience. This day evening took tea at Bro. Gibson's with Bro + Sis Sites. Spent the evening in pleasant conversation. Came [home] between 9 + 10 + went to bed.

4th. Today in the forenoon attended to some things connected with the interest of the Asylum. For that called on bro Maclay + with him at Bro. Gibson. Afternoon studied my usual lesson. Towards [evening] we all went on the hill and walked as far as the ravine + back. Bro. + Sis. Sites enjoyed it very much. Bro + Sis Gibson took tea with us + spent the evening.

[137] **5th.** In forenoon usual duties. Afternoon went with bro Sites to Ching Sing Tong to attend the Saturday service of Quarterly meeting. Bro. Maclay preached.

6th. Sunday today. Went to the Quarterly meeting at Tong Tan. Love feast good, preaching sweet communion interesting; 23 partakers besides foreigners. Evening at home. After the 4 o'clock service, bro Gibson preaching from Grow in Grace. Bro Dodds took tea with us + joined with us in our family prayer meeting. Precious season of praying + singing.

7th. Steamer "Azaf" in; writing letters for the mail. Today finished one for Baldwins.

8th. Today wrote a letter to Mary's people, finished one to Terry and wrote a Quarterly report of my labors in Fuh Chau for Maclay.

Evening all hands went to Pō Mi Sang to prayer meeting.

9th. Studied as usual. Nothing in particular. Towards night, Schenk called on us, took tea with us. Evening at the prayer meeting. Maclay led. Very good + profitable.

[138] **10th.** Was so engaged in study today forgot to go to Tâ Ting. Studied out my morning lesson, read one chapter in the new and one in the Old Testament. Think I was never making better progress than now, in the language. Mrs. Maclay gave us some plants this afternoon + I had my man set them out in the door yard. After supper + prayers went [to] the Chinese weekly prayer meeting. It was very well attended + the prayers seemed to be earnest. Came home at 9 and read to Mary for an hour Charles Dickens work entitled "Posthumous papers of the Pickwick Club", not a very religious work nor calculated to excite religious fervor but humorous + playful + I think harmless. When I have read it through shall be better able to decide on its merits + tendency.

[Note: Inserted between the pages of the diary at this point is a small sheet of ruled paper with a numbered list of what appears to be ideas for a sermon:]

1. The body is the residence of the soul.
2. Is also the temple of the holy spirit
3. Is called the temple of God
4. God made the body
5. God has redeemed the body
6. To him should it be subject

Bodily Sins

7. Gluttony, too abstemious
8. Opium Eating
9. Oversleeping - Undersleeping
10. Laziness – overwork

11th. Today in company with Bro. + Sis Sites went over to Rev. C. Hartwell's in the city. Spent the time very pleasantly. After dinner we all, in company with Bro Hartwell, wife Mary + Charlie, went down on the street, found our way to the city wall on which we walked for a long distance till we came to a way that we took which led us in the first place to the idolatrous temple of the "Goddess of Mercy". After pretty thoroughly investigating the old lady + her attendants + equipages +c. we bent our way to the temple of the Nine Genii. Having seen all we cared to + some more, viz an [139] old grey headed man worshipping a huge, monster ugly, black looking image of Mud, we turned our steps homeward by a new route, visiting on our course the lot lately purchased for the erection of two Mission houses, one for Mr. Hartwell + the other for Mr. Masden [Warden?]. Striking the city wall again we were soon home or back to Mr. Hartwell's. After visiting a little + taking a little refreshment we left for home. The ladies having chairs we let them go on ahead while

Sites + myself slowly moved on, stopping here + there at shops to view what appeared curious + interesting. Arriving at Ching Sing Tong, took the road by the side of the Padj Field + went on some distance when bro Sites began to desire a Sedan – engaged a couple for 100 cash a chair, rode home, found the ladies waiting in the dining room unable to get farther entrance to the house because I had the key. After supper retired tired.

12th. This morning was awakened by a noise + bustle of chairs, settees, bureaus moving about the house. Arose and found my wife intent on having a carpet down which she accomplished during the day with the assistance of Chinese servanis + myself. Studied some in the forenoon. Teacher left at 12 to go to the feast of flying kites in the city on WooSheShau [MooSheShau?]. Wrote to Sloan for some tea. He sent up a large box. Sites gone to country.

[140] **13th.** Today had charge of the Tung Ang services. Got Kim Tark to preach in the morning. Attended the Sabbath school myself. Mary + Mrs. Sites also were present. Maclay preached in English at 4 P.M. from the words "Lead me in a plain path because of my enemies".

21st. During the past week I have been very busy about the Asylum interest, getting subscriptions +c. Have succeeded in getting \$160. already from the foreign community and have hope of as much more this week. I have also been some occupied with preparations for preaching yesterday in English. Which I did to a small company there being only one outside the present – Mr. Schenck. He called a few minutes after service. I tried to give him some good advice.

This paragraph is devoted to our prayer meeting last night. It was a time of blessing and much assurance. I am unworthy to have so good people in my house. But thanks be to God for his mercies.

Today went with bro Gibson up the river with the intention of going to Ngu Kang but on account of rain staid with the boat till he came back. Home 1/2 past 7. Backward [?]

[141] **22nd.** Today have been busy in calculating for the collection of funds for the Asylum. Got \$35. more on the subscription, in all \$255., hope of still more. Studied my Chinese a little. Towards night the mail came in. Received a letter from Milton¹ friends – Father + Mother Allen. All well and warlike. We get news of two signal defeats of the Federal Forces. Tonight at home at peace with God + man as far as I know. Game of quoits at 1/2 5.

¹ *Transcriber's Note: Milton, Vermont.*

23rd. Today at home busy in Chinese in the forenoon. At 12 M. went to the street and bargained for some matting for my study to be ready on Saturday. Trimmer [?] came and I showed him what to do – box air tight some apples + peaches for bro. Sites. Found some hoops for the use of the ladies in exercise. Schenck came, stayed to tea and prayer meeting. Had a game of Quoits with Sites between 5 o'clock + dark. This evening Bro. Sites led the meeting at my house, Gibson + family having gone to the Anchorage for a few days. For the first time since I came to Fuh Chau I heard ladies pray in our Wednesday night prayer meeting – Mrs. Martin + Mrs Sites joining. May it not be the last time.

25th. Today have felt unwell, dull headache with an indisposition to study or write. The man or a man who makes matting came and I engaged [142] him to make 7 pieces 3 feet wide and 20 feet long for \$1.00 a piece or \$7.00 for 40 yds equivalent to what we paid last year for some from one of the southern ports. The matting is to be partly red – red squares + white squares alternating. If the man succeeds in making it he will do what has never been done before in Fuh Chau and it will be of some advantage to us foreigners.

26th. Today much better in body and mind than yesterday. Studied my usual lessons in Chinese. Finished reading the Life of the Pioneer Bishop Asbury in which I have been much interested. He was a great + good + laborious man, the impress of whose mind is on American Methodism today. May his mantle fall on the pioneers of Methodism in China. Bishop Asbury once at least passed near my house, as near as an adjoining town which is a pleasing fact to remember.

31st. Today Mission Meeting at Maclays. All present. Paid off my servants. This afternoon Capt. Schenck of the Saginaw called on the Mission. Expressed his gratitude to us for our care for his boy.

Nov 1st. Mr. Schenck Jr. called with two sub's of the Saginaw, Bordley + Haight.

[143] **Nov 2nd.** Today went to the country 20 miles to Kang Chia. Found the brethren in health and in seeming good spirits. In the evening had a prayer meeting of some length. I think one brother objected to praying for what reason I did not distinctly understand unless it was the want of a peaceful heart. Slept in a little room petitioned [sic] off from audience room 6 ft. wide by about 12 ft. long. As the weather was mild, the cracks in the shabby outside wall did not let in too much air so as to induce a cold. I slept soundly on my Chinese bed of hoses [?], boards, + a cottoned bed quilt.

3rd. Sunday in the country. Arose at 7. Took a bowl of rice, 3 eggs boiled, some chicken, bread + butter and tea and thus made a breakfast. At 9 or thereabouts, the brethren and sisters came together and we sung and prayed + prayed + sung for some time and then Ching Mi preached about the parable of the Husbandman that called together his servants and gave each a portion to occupy till he should return from the far country. After this we had a class meeting in which all spake. After dinner and a little rest I talked to them from "If ye confess me before men +c". In the evening the brethren read + we had another prayer meeting. At 9 retired to rest + slept till 6 next morning + was refreshed.

[144] **Nov 4th.** Arose this morning with a sense of the Divine approbation on my coming to labor for the good of these poor ignorant Chinese. Without this sense how sad should I be. I suppose the Master knew I needed this favor this morning to encourage me to come again + yet again to these few sheep in the wilderness. Kang Chia itself is a larger place but no Christians are yet in the city. The place where our brethren live is one of the hundreds of little hamlets that go to make up the suburbs of the city. We hope this little light may attract many by its brilliancy and lead them from the city of death to God + Heaven.

Left the Brethren at 1/2 past 6 A.M. in the care of the Great Shepard, got home about 10 A.M. Found that the mail was in, got a letter from Baldwins. The Culbertons from Shanghai, on their way home from Amoy, were in town. I met Mr. C. on the street with Mr. Doolittle but his wife + 3 daughters I did not have the pleasure of meeting, though they called on Mrs. Martin.

7th. Today I made a visit at the Rev. Mr. Baldwin of the A.B.C.F.M. Went after dinner to Tâ Ting. After returning to Po Na Sang, Mr. Baldwin went with me to buy some sugar in which I was successful. Bought 200 lbs for \$17.80. Returned home. Attended Chinese Weekly Prayer Meeting.

[145] **9th.** The week has gone. Yesterday the mail steamer Azoff came in for letters +c. Wrote an answer to Baldwins and a letter home. This evening we all took tea at Dr Wentworth's and spent the evening pleasantly in conversation and Authoretica card-playing.

10th. Sunday. In the morning attended the Chinese Service. At 12 went to Quang Ing Chang and talked myself, at 2 attended the Sabbath School and led it as usual. At 4 attended the English service. Bro. Wooden preached from "God so loved the world +c." Evening usual family prayer meeting. Eyes troublesome. Cannot read nights but a little.

11th. Monday. At home. Studied some but, my eyes aching, spent most of my time in conversing with my teacher. Learned the six polite arts of

China. 1st Ceremonies; 2nd Music; 3rd Archery; 4th Charicaturing; 5th A knowledge of the Characters + writing; 6th Arithmetic. These are very ancient, at least some are. Went over to Maclay's and bought 500 envelopes for a dollar, 2 little black book[s] for 8 cents apiece and a bottle of mucilage with brush for 12 1/2 cts.

[146] **14th.** Today went to "Ching Sing Tong". Lo Tong preached, congregation not large. Coming home met bro Sites and the Ladies at the Keu Chii Tong. Went with and interpreted for them in making various purchases. Did not get home to dinner till nearly five o'clock. In the evening went and led the Chinese prayer meeting, as usual. On our arrival home the Boy gave us the cards of the Messrs. Nichols and Middleton. After prayer meeting spent some time in Sites' room. Had a cup of tea there and prayers.

16th. Early this morning I went with a large party consisting of the Rev'ds Wentworth, Gibson, C.C. Baldwin, Wooden, Maclay + Sites, Messrs. Middleton + Dodds, Mrs. Gibson + Sites, the Misses Woolston + Master Robert Maclay to Ngu Kang to attend the dedication of the New Chapel just completed. We arrived on the spot at 1/2 past one o'clock P.M. The services were immediately commenced and a large company of Chinese brethren and a much larger company of heathen were in and about the Chapel. The services were introduced by Bro. Gibson, Bro. Maclay preached, Dr Wentworth read the communion service, and we all administered the Sacrament [147] in turn. The whole scene was very impressive and I trust some poor heathen mind was touched by the simplicity + purity of our worship. O, may that whole region of country soon be Christ's. After the services were over and we had satisfied our appetites, all except Bro. Gibson, Mr + Mrs Sites left for the boats where we arrived a little before dark, arriving home about 7 o'clock.

17th. Today, at the Chinese service in morning. Dr. Wentworth preached. Afterwards went to "Quang Ing Chang". Talked myself. Afternoon at the Sabbath School as usual. At four, went to our English service. Bro. Maclay preached. Evening after prayers, a few of the School boys came in and I sung with them some of the new hymns + tunes.

23rd. The past week I have been very busy reading and writing on my sermon for tomorrow's service. Have attended to all my Chinese work besides, except going to my Chapel. Monday + since, Mary has been sick with what seems to be the remittent fever. She has the doctor daily.

[148] **24th Sunday.** Today attended to all my Chinese work and in the afternoon preached from Numbers 24 : 5 to the members of the Mission and a few others that came, viz. Mr Dodds, Mr Middleton and another

young man whose name I do not know. Today Mary not much better. Has the fever regularly but little of the chills.

25th. Today at home. Finished putting down some matting. Studied as usual. Sites gave me an order on the Treasurer of the Mission for fifty dollars. Took up ten of it, intend sending 40 home or to America for necessaries. Today Mary not much better.

26th. Today Mary has seemed much improved. I think she will soon recover if careful.

Baby is growing finely + is a very good little boy. He is very playful and happy all day long.

27th. Today Mary still better. Sat up most all day. I have studied my usual lessons and finished reading the Parthinmans papers of the Pickwick Club. Prayer meeting this evening. Sites led.

[149] **28th Thursday.** "Thanksgiving Day". Forenoon after getting my lessons went to Tâ Ting. Dinner at Gibson's. All the Mission present except Mary who was not hardly strong enough though she is still improving.

Evening at the Chinese prayer meeting. Afterwards at home.

30th. Today Regular Mission meeting at Bro. Maclay's. One more month is gone. Mary is fast improving. Today in afternoon went to the Boys School. The occasion was the graduation of two young men, Ing Quang and Ing Sieng.

[150] **Dec 1st Sunday.** Today attended the usual services in Chinese at Ting Ang Tong. At the service this morning Bro Gibson baptised some of his school boys, Keng Chông, Neng Chick, Muk Chui and [blank line].

Evening, prayer meeting in my study.

4th. Today at home busy in study. Evening at prayer meeting, very cold and formal from beginning to end.

28th. Today at about 9 o'clock A.M. bid my family goodbye for a day or two and started for the Country Appointment at Kang Chia. I took passage in the mission boat rowed by four, three men and one woman. The day was pleasant, not fair, and quite chilly. Ing Quang, the oldest of the two late graduates of the Mission School accompanied me. The tide was favorable but for most of the day the wind was unfavorable. The run to the Que Hung + Ngu Kang landing was quite rapid. Stopped on the way this side of the upper bridge to look at a Sugar Making establishment. The cane was being pressed between two huge stones

made round and shaped for the purpose by the chisel. One of these stones was turned by two large [151] water oxen or Buffalos in the same way that apples are ground into Pumise [sic] in Vermont. The other stone was turned by cogs projecting from its fellow stone which worked into corresponding notches or indentations made in itself. The sap or juice ran into a spout which conveyed it under ground to a vat or large San Cack tub in a small shed nearby where was the Arch for the kettles and where the sugar is made by boiling the juice. They appeared to be sugaring off in one of the kettles. The Arch contained 3 iron kettles or pans for boiling the juice. I stopped at a place farther up the river where they had a short time before "sugared off". They had dipped the sugar into a large cooler and it looked very much like the sugar made in such vast quantities in my own native state. I asked the price and was told it was between three + four dollars per 100 lbs.

After we arrived at the first landing I got out of the boat and walked a long distance some two or three miles along the bank of the river. Just this side of the upper bridge saw some twenty or thirty large red boats filled with soldiers. Perhaps they were recruiting boats.

Arrived at the landing at about 2 o'clock [152] P.M. and forthwith proceeded to the place of my destination, a little clump of old dilapidated houses, one of which is our Parsonage. A few of the Brethren were at home and seemed happy at my having come to spend the holy day with them. At a hamlet but a short way off was an idolatrous service going on, which was kept up at another place the following day.

After supper, which consisted of Rice Curry and Sweet Potatoes and butter, I felt very tired + cold and went and lay down thinking I would soon get rest and warmth from my thick Chinese quilt. I soon fell asleep and when I awoke heard Ing Quang preaching away to some men that had come in from the idolatrous worship to see the foreign teacher. As he was very earnest and all seemed to be listening attentively with occasionally expressions of approval at what he was saying, I thought I would not arise and thus break up the preaching. I soon was asleep again and when I again awoke I heard the Brethren praying preparatory to retiring. So I slept on till morning light without awaking any length of time.

[153] **29th.** This Sabbath morning was pleasant but cold. By the middle of the forenoon a south wind commenced blowing which continued all day. In the morning, after Breakfasting on Rice and Curry, our first service of the day commenced. Ing Quang was the speaker. He preached from the 11th Chapter of Hebrews. His subject seemed to be the power of faith which he illustrated in the cases of Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham + Peter. The sermon was scriptural + forcible and no doubt will do good. After the sermon came our Class Meeting. The Brethren spake

in a spiritual manner, and seemed to have made advancement in religious experience. After dinner we went to the large town of Kang Chia proper, containing some 20,000 people. Arriving at at [sic] a street called "Sek Chi Ke", we dispensed the "Word of Life" to quite a large company that gathered around. In the crowd I noticed a very interesting young lad who gave great attention while Ing Quang was preaching. As he was thus listening, I saw a man coming down the street who walked up to this boy and gave him a cut with his han[d] on the side of his head at the same time saying about the same as I'll teach you better than to stand there and listen [154] to those foreign doctrines, and then led him off out of sight + hearing. Perhaps that boy will yet be converted to Christianity. Distributing a few books, we came back to our old quarters having been civilly enough treated by nearly all save a few parcels of wild boys. There is much to hope for [in] Kang Chia. In the evening examined the brethren in the Scriptures, found they have made some progress in reading. We had a prayer meeting also. When about half through, heard a loud noise outside and soon in came two blustering boys very furious and demanded the immediate departure of Bro. Puong Seng to help his heathen Father finish some tubs for tomorrow's market. After some consultation he thought it best to leave, evidently fearing the consequences of his father's wrath. None of his friends are Christians but his wife. May the Lord preserve him in this his trying hour and not suffer him to give up the true way.

After the meeting was over sung a few hymns, then retired but not to sleep very soundly. The bed seemed hard, and it was cold. Large cracks were in the side of the room letting in currents of air. I had to sleep with my clothes [155] on and with my hat on my head to avoid catching a severe cold. But I managed to get a very good night rest after all.

30th. Arose, washed, eat my breakfast, visited a sick inquirer, prayed with him, had morning prayers with the Brethren and bade them goodbye in Chinese style, proceeded to the Boat. On the way saw a sickening sight though not an unusual thing for China – a Corpse by the road side partially covered with dirt on which was feasting an unfeeling dog. I saw a portion of a decayed limb and hastened on with horror at such a scene within sight of many dwellings and but a short distance from a Temple devoted to the superstition of Budha. Arrived at the Boat at 9 o'clock, and came direct home, arriving about 1/2 past 12 M. Found my family well and doing well, the baby in the care of his mother doing good justice to some bread + milk before him. Towards night Schenck called and I went with him to Mr. Sites for a call. Eve at home with a slight headache.

31st. Today has been our Regular Mission Meeting Unit [?]. Paid off my servants. Hedger sent in his Bill \$47.25. The old year nas nearly [156] run his race. So will we have done who now occupy places in the earth.

[156]

[Vol 1 Part 8: Jan 1st, 1862 – Sept 20th, 1862]

Jan. 1st 1862

At 12 M. the British Chindi Bell rang out the old and in the new year. Today made calls in the city and at Po Na Sang and on all the ladies in our Compound. In the evening went to our mission. Prayer Meeting, conducted by Bro. Gibson.

5th. Today the first Sunday in the year commenced the series of special religious services to be continued a week. In the forenoon, the Chinese converts of all the Missions + the servants of the mission families met in the Po Na Sang Church. Bro. C.C. Baldwin officiated and preached a very good discourse on the Divinity, Personality, + Works of the Holy Spirit. In the afternoon at 3 o'clock Bro. Peet preached in American at the M. E. Mission Church. Tung Ang Tong on the same subject. In the evening Bro. Maclay preached in Chinese to our [157] own members + servants and with my assistance administered the Sacrament.

6th. Today in forenoon studied as usual. In the afternoon at 2 started with Maclay for the city. Overtook Broths Peet, Baldwin + Woodin, arrived at Mr. Hartwell's at 3. The meeting was led by Bro. Hartwell. Subject: Confession of Sins, Humiliation + prayer. Prayers were offered by Bro's Hartwell, Smith + Gibson. Remarks were made by Hartwell, Baldwin, Maclay, Woodin, Peet, Hartwell, Doolittle, Baldwin + Martin. Bro. Sites thinks it was a very good meeting. Arrived home about 6 o'clock. After tea, Mary + I went over to the Sites and made a call of an hour. Read a story in Godys Ladies Book. Had Prayers, went to bed.

7th. After the usual round of duties in forenoon, + dinner over, Mary + I started on foot for Po Na Sang. After a prefatory service of administering Batism to Mr. Woodin's young son, the regular meeting was opened and conducted by Mr. Woodin. Subject: "Home Objects of Prayer". Prayer was offered by Brethren Woodin, Doolittle, Dodds + Sites. Remarks were made by Woodin, Maclay, Doolittle, Hartwell + Peet.

[158] **8th.** This forenoon usual duties. Afternoon meeting at Ting Ang Tong. Bro. Gibson in the chair – Subject for remark + prayer: Foreign Objects – such as the downfall of All Antichrist – for the spread of religious liberty in the east – for the Jews – for peace in America, for a blessing of God on all in heathen lands +c. Remarks were made by

Gibson, Baldwin, Woodin, Doolittle, Peet, Burns + Martin. Prayers by Gibson, Martin, Burns, + Baldwin. The best meeting yet.

9th. Studied in the first part of the day. Afternoon went to the city with Gibson to attend the meeting at Rev Geo. Smith's, himself leading. Subjects for remark and prayer: The Church + Ministry Schools +c. Remarks were made by Revds. Smith, Peet. Peet, Martin, Doolittle, Baldwin, Woodin. Peet, Martin, Doolittle, Gibson. Prayers by Bro's Smith, Gibson, Hartwell, Burns.

On the way home bought some candy for Arthur Maclay. Got home about dusk. Eve at home.

10th. The meeting today was led by Bro. Sites at Mr. Doolittle's. Subject: the Word of God. Prayers by Sites, Hartwell, Maclay, Woodin. Remarks were made by several but I have forgotten the order.

[159] **11th.** Meeting today at Ting Ang Tong led by myself. Subject: The Lord's Day - that its Divine Institution may be regarded + its desecration cease at home and abroad.

12th. This forenoon Bro Hartwell preached at Ching Sing Tong to the Chinese brethren of both Societies on the Sabbath Day, and this afternoon Bro Doolittle preached at Ting Ang Tong in English on the Signs of the times, its dangers + duties +c. I believe it was the first sermon he has written since he came to China. It was long but quite interesting.

This Sabbath evening Bro + Sis Sites came over and we had our usual family Prayer Meeting.

16th. The first days of the week have been spent in study + other common affairs of life. Today went to Tâ Ting. Lo Young preach[ed] to a few that came in. On my way over bought some Sicorici root + on my way home bought a wooden wash dish to supply the place of a nice one the Baby broke last night while we were at the prayer meeting.

Tonight at the Chinese prayer meeting most all went. Singing lively, prayers earnest. A good meeting.

[160] **Feb 14th.** The days fly swiftly away in pleasant duties. The 31st of Jan. was the Chinese New Year. The 9th of this month our little Eddie was one year old. The Lord has been good in sparing his life and in giving him so much health and development of mind. Yesterday went to the city + took dinner at the Rev. Hartwell's. Came back to Ching Sing Tong at 3 o'clock and stayed till 4. Lo Tang + Kim Tark preached and talked with the people. Tong Mi came in later.

Today regular meeting for translation of the scriptures. Went over 3 [4?] Chapters. After this, went with Gibson to see Mis. Boat¹. This evening Schenck called. Went with him to printing office, from thence to Sites' + from thence to Gibson's. Evening at home. Mary not very "well".

15th. Today have been assisting Gibson in painting our Mission Boat. Towards night and in the evening made preparations for the morrow.

16th. Today preached my first sermon in Chinese at Ting Ang Tong. One week ago preached in Chinese for the first time at Ching Sing Tong. Feel the need of a more extensive vocabulary before I can do much at preaching the gospel in this language, but by the help of God will try and do all I can for his glory. [161] Bro. Gibson preached in English at 4 P.M. on the subject of prayer. Evening read in "Hebrew People".

17th. Till dinner time engaged with Gibson in putting a second coat of paint on the "Mission Boat". Have it finished and will be dry to use day after tomorrow.

22nd. Today engaged a small "San Pan" and, accompanied by bro's Kin Tiak + Pang Seng, went to "Kang Chia", stopping at Hnai Ang and Au Huang Che to preach on our way. The tide being strong against us + no wind favoring, we were a long time in getting up the river. It was nearly dark before we arrived at the place of landing. Found a large collection of people at Sang Pieng. They had been having a feast in honor of the death of two persons in the village. In the evening I was guest with the brethren at a sort of feast. Made out to eat some of the Chinese preparations.

Retired early and left Kin to talk + pray with the people.

23rd. Today religious services at Sang Pieng and also went to Kang Chia. Several outsiders present at Sang Pieng and quite a good company at Kang Chia to listen to the word.

[162] **24th.** Came home today. Four Chinamen – Boatmen – were my fellow passengers, two of them members of Sang Pieng class. Overtook bro. Lai Me + wife and took them off from the boat they came down on and brought them into port. Arrived between one and two o'clock P.M.

28th. Last day of the month. Mission Meeting at Maclay's. Today paid off my servants. Worked some in my garden. Sowed some tomatoe seeds. Yesterday put in some beet seeds and some English turnip seeds. Have some cabbages growing nicely and some Bombay onions finely going to seed.

¹ *Mission Boat.*

Today very pleasant + warm even hot in the sun. Towards night a Thunder Storm came on – the first since last year – but it was not severe.

The above tomatoes did not come. Sowed some more in April.

[163]

Aug 10th, 1862

Today preached at Tieng Ang Tong.

Very hot, sweat freely. For the past few months have been much engaged in the use of the language, more especially since Bro Gibson left for Japan, which was on the 11th of June.

Aug 11th, 1862

Today the warmest day of the season - thermometer 90 degrees in the shade.

It may be well for me here to record that we are living in one of the hill houses this hot summer. We find it much more comfortable than ours under the hill. Thus far this hot season I and Mary + our little boy have been remarkably well. It is a source of much happiness here to have good health.

A few days ago received a letter from Bro Gibson from Yokohama in Japan; he arrived there on the 21st of July a month after leaving Fuh Chau. While at Shanghai 2 weeks all his family were down sick. There is much sickness in this city among the Chinese. The Cholera seems to be the prevailing disease. In one family seven have died. This season is a time of general peace for Fuh Chau and [164] our native churches are enjoying a large share of temporal and [I] hope spiritual enjoyment.

For the present while Bro. Gibson is away I also have charge of the boys school. Thus far I have had nothing serious to attend to in this department. The Lord is good, better than all my fears. I am sinful but Jesus is precious. This evening Bible Class as usual consisting mostly of the school boys.

Aug 12th 1862 Today at home busy writing and studying. In afternoon Mrs. Barkly with Mary. Towards evening Mail came in, bringing our letters and papers. 1 letter from Milton friends, 1 from Baldwin + 1 from Capt. Pendleton. Baldwin's letter contained a photograph of himself and wife. He expected to sail in the "Hotspur" between the 1st + 15th of June.

Bible class this evening. Reading the Psalms in course with explanations.

13th. Today reading papers and writing letters. Evening Prayer Meeting. Wrote a letter to Capt. Pendleton of Steamer Surprise.

14th. Today in forenoon, teacher being absent, studied with Sang King my usual lesson. Wrote a letter to [165] Bro Gibson. Afternoon went to Ching Sing Tong. Bro's Lo Chai and Kutaik preached. A very good time. On my way bought 60 lbs pounds [sic] of Irish Potatoes at Ahok's for \$2.00. On my way back passed a Chinaman with an artificial nose, the

first of the kind I have ever seen. Stopped at Ahok's and brought home two pieces of Alpacca [sic] for Mary's inspection, neither of which suits. This evening at home. Read to Mary from "Ministers Moving". [morning?] Bro. Lo Chai with his cousin called a few moments.

Aug 15th. Today have been engaged a good deal of the time in writing on a sermon for next Sabbath. In forenoon, bro. Sites called a few minutes, or an hour or so. Lin Kien called at noon and got some ink. Towards night Mary went with me to Ahok's, bought 3 yds blue Alpaca at 70 cts a yard and a dress pattern of Japanese raw silk of above 18 yds for \$6. Intend sending it to Mother Harriet to compensate her a very little for the fiftys of dollars she has given me. Took a letter today to Bro. Maclay to be sent to Bro Gibson who is at Yokohama Japan with his family. Mary + I called on the young ladies this evening. Sat outside in their pleasant dooryard and whiled away an agreeable hour's conversation with them. Returned a little before 9 o'clock and after our devotions retired. As I want to fill this page tonight I will here record that our little Eddie is beginning to say many words in both English + Chinese.

[166] One more item I should have noticed further back but will do it now. Today while at Ahok's, we were invited to go up stairs. There we saw a very well dressed mandarin from Shanghai, a nephew of the Lieutenant governor as we were told. What interested us the most was the manner in which the mandarin greeted his friends and was greeted by them, viz: by bowing close to the floor in the same manner as the old Bible characters are represented as doing. Never in my life did some of the scenes of the Old Testament come up so vividly before my mind. Abraham bowing before the Children of Heth.

Aug. 16th. Today though some headache have been most of the time engaged in preparations for the Sabbath. Was called early by Bro. Sites to get permission to get Pek Sing to go down with him to Ing Sieng's home to make him a call as he has been sick for some time. Went over to my old home and wrote where it was more quiet. Two Chinamen called on business which I could not help them about. If we missionaries would but help the Chinese to make money, if that was our business, we should not need for converts – we should find them ready made on our arrival. While at supper Mrs. Maclay came in for a doctor book for Mrs. Hamilton.

This evening at home. Easy, contented, happy.

[167] **Aug 17th.** Today is the Sabbath. Awoke refreshed with a good night's sleep to prepare for and perform, as best I might, the duties resting upon me. At 1/2 past 9 o'clock A.M. repaired to the Chinese Chapel and preached to a very well filled house from the text in Matt. 12th 16. The men of Ninevah shall rise up in the day of Judgement +c. I greatly rejoice that I am beginning to be able to preach to the Chinese in

their own tongue. I am still laboring under many difficulties, my vocabulary is limited, and my intonation foreign, and often provoke a smile in my audience at my foreign accent + hesitations. But still I think I convey my meaning tolerably well notwithstanding.

As I was again to preach in English at 5 P.M. did not go out to any chapel on the street as is my usual custom. A small congregation listened to a discourse from me at 5 P.M. founded on Luke 24 : 32. After service Messrs. J.H. Nichols and – Middleton called a few moments on their way from church. In the evening Bible class as usual. Reading the Book of Nehemiah.

Aug 18th. Today have finished writing letters for mail and sent them off, one for Capt. Pendleton and one for father and mother Allen. Studied this afternoon in Chinese. Towards night Bro + Sister Brinkley came in and took [dinner] with us and spent [168] part of the evening. About dusk heard a rumor that the native helpers who went with Bro Maclay to Sin Mek Ke yesterday had had trouble this morning and that Ching Mi, the native helper there, had been mobbed and bound and dragged away, badly beaten. Kim Taik soon came over and confirmed it all and gave full particulars. Some time ago several men began a system of persecution against several who were trying to learn the Christian doctrines. Ching Mi came down from and in conversation with Bro. Maclay, Bro. Maclay told Ching Mi it would be well to take the names of these persecutors as it might be of some use hereafter. When Ching Mi went back he wrote the names of these men on a blank leaf in the hymn book used while they held their meetings. In the meantime one of these persecutors was taken sick with the dysentery and died. Some of the friends of the deceased came to the house where the inquirers [?] held their meeting and saw the names of these persecuting men in his hymn book. Being very superstitious it was believed that these Jesus men had sung and prayed this man dead, hence the renewal of persecutions. It was in the shop of the father of the young man that died that Ching Mi was beaten and bound with a rope and dragged as yet we know not where. Ching Mi + the other helpers that went up with Bro Maclay stopped at this man's shop to talk with him and reason him out of his [169] superstitious belief that the Jesus men were the cause of the death of his son.

Aug 19th. This morning called at Bro Maclay's and made further inquiries about the affair of yesterday, and tried to confirm him in the opinion it was best to complain to the American Consul and try and get the deliverance of our Native Helper. Think he has done so but with what result have not learned.

Today commenced reading the life of Mary Queen of Scots. Took dinner – myself + family – at the Miss. Woolston's. Stayed there till nearly four o'clock, then came home and studied my Chinese lesson. Called

into the school at 1/2 past four a few moments. Tonight Bible class in Psalms.

20th. Today owing to a sore on my lower jaw have not felt very comfortable. In the afternoon it broke and felt better. A sort of a cold sore or species of a boil, I do not know which.

Translation meeting this forenoon. Translated parts of the 5th + 6th Chapters of Mark. This afternoon took my lesson in Chinese and continued reading Mary Queen of Scots. Find that she was daughter of James the V King of Scotland by Mary of Loraine, Sister of Henry II, King of France afterwards educated in France, betrothed to the Dauphin afterwards Francis II, King of France. Today hear that Ching Mi is released [170] after suffering much abuse and severe beating and hanging by his thumbs. The Chinese brethren wish him to come down to town. They are in a great state of excitement. Prayer Meeting tonight led by Bro. Brinkley.

Aug 21st. This forenoon called on Bro. Brinkley to make some arrangement about taking our wives out for a sail on the morrow. Concluded if we go either way to go up the river as the tide will favor up better than down. Received a letter from Mr. Thompson of the Anchorage in which he proposes to call on me tomorrow. Answered the letter by telling him I shall be happy to see him in the forenoon. Wrote a Chit to Mr. Weller asking the loan of his boat. He replied by suggesting he might wish it himself, otherwise could have it with pleasure.

Afternoon went to Ching Sing Tong. After talking myself, Lo Chai + Kim Taik held forth – congregation not large. Hear that Ching Mi has got as far as the Sang Pieng parsonage. His case not so dreadful as it might have been. Trust good may come out of it through the overruling providence of God. Finished reading first vol. of Mary Queen of Scots by Miss Binger + commenced second vol. Took Chinese lesson as is my usual daily task. Mrs. Binkley called on Mary towards night. The Maclays still later came and sat in our dooryard for some time.

[171] **Aug 22nd.** Today at home. In forenoon translation meeting. Wrote a note to a Parson [?] Mr. Mody for his boat for a sail but it was down the river and did not get back in time so gave up the expected pleasure. Mr. Thompson called on me and left with me an order on Russell + Co for \$700. which he wishes me to pay to the carpenter building his new house. Afterward read in 2nd vol. of Mary Queen of Scots. How she married Dornley [?], of his assassination, her subsequent marriage to Bothwell [?], her surrender to the confederate lords, her imprisonment, her escape and flight to England for the protection of Elizabeth, her cool reception and detention.

This evening Bible class – psalms – Ching Mi has come down and stops tonight in the Printing Office. Have not yet seen him.

Aug 23rd. Today's events have been few. 1st Went to Book Club, took back "Mand" and "Ministers Moving" + brought home "Chinese and their Rebellions" by Thomas Taylor Meadows. 2nd Called on Ching Mi a few moments. He is not hurt very badly. 3d Drew four hundred dollars from Russell and Co. on Mr. Thompson's order and paid it over to the carpenter building his house. 4th Read considerably in "The Chinese and their Rebellions". The manner in which the author treats on the Chinese + their government appears to be founded on reason and truth, though I am not prepared to receive aii he says.

[172] **Aug 24th.** Just 3 years ago I was united in marriage to the present partner of my toils, joys, and griefs. This morning preached in Chinese at "Tieng Ang Tong" from Acts 9 : 31. Good attention. Ching Mi was able to get down. Capt. Locke of the Ship "Invincible" was present. Is spending the Sabbath at Maclays. Read some in Thomas Taylor Meadows' "Chinese and their Rebellions". A very readable book, instructive and suggestive to the Missionary what is his relative position. Afternoon at the American Service. Bro Sites discoursed from Heb 10 : 25.
Evening Bible Class. Finished Nehemiah.

Aug 25th. The principle thing I have to record about myself today a hard, disagreeable, nervous headache from morn till dusk. This evening it seems to have left me all of a sudden. This morning about 7 o'clock Mail came in. Got 2 papers and a letter from Biblical Institute written by W.W. Baldwin Cor. Sec. of Miss. Soc. Towards night quite a number of papers came in from a box which some one in the mission has just received via Ship. This evening at home. No bible class. Have not done much today but lounge about.

Aug 26th. Today have spent my time in study and reading. Noticed in the Advocate of June 19th the death of the wife of an old class mate of mine at Concord – the [173] Rev. Thomas Elliott of the New York Conf. She died at the home of her youth in East Sanbornton N.H. I saw her before her marriage. She was 23 years of age at her death.

Towards night Maclay came in to see about some vegetable marrow. Sites came in and chatted awhile below.

Bible class this evening. Psalms, read 8.

Aug 27th. Today at home. Forenoon translation meeting. Corrected the 8th Chapter of Mark. Afternoon read in Chinese my lesson. Evening, weekly prayer meeting. Schenck called before tea, went with him to Sites.

28th. Today finished in forenoon a letter to the Concord Biblical Institute. Read some in Chinese + their rebellions.

Afternoon went to Tâ Ting. Got asleep in my chair on the way. Bro's Lo Tang, Kim Taik + So Chai held forth the word of life. Walked back about half the way. Evening, went with Mary out on the hill, and sat in the cool breeze for a long time. After coming back, busied myself awhile in reading Bayard's [Boyard's?] comments on the Constitution of U. States of America.

29th. Today translation meeting in forenoon. Afternoon studied in Chinese till towards night when I when I [sic] went down to Hedge's and bought me a hat for \$3. and a box of Figs for \$3.50 or \$3.75. Today bought 2 pair of shoes [174] of Bro. Maclay. Just at night a heavy shower of rain. The weather is getting perceptibly cooler as the season advances. Mrs. Binkley is quite sick so as to call the doctor today. Engaged a man to [alter?] a Bedstead for \$3. Mrs. Martin today washed her hair in Borax water and says "it is clean and nice as can be"!!

Aug 30th. This forenoon attended "Regular Mission Monthly Meeting". Settled up my accounts with the Mission Treasurer. At the meeting was authorized to make inquiries for a mission residence lot in the city or somewhere near the East gate of the city. Maclay proposes, it seems, to have me located there if practicable.

After dinner, or about one o'clock started for the country in the mission boat. Taik Hena, Neng Chick, Lo Tang + Sek Na were in company, with a lot of carpenter tools, in the "hold of the ship". A freshet in the river and but little wind made the progress slow. It was five o'clock before we arrived at the landing. I sent the boat on with Lo Tang to Kang Chia, Ten Me also joining him at the place of my landing. Arrived ag [at?] Ngu Kang about 6 P.M. Immediately ate my supper, drank some tea and waited for prayer meeting which occurred in the evening. After which retired fresh, slept soundly.

[175] **Aug 31st.** Arose this Sabbath morning and prepared to leave for Que Kung. Arrived there about 9 A.M. After saluting the brethren, taking some tea +c, the bell rang and we met for a Love Feast, it being Quarterly Meeting. The love feast was of interest; a very good state of feeling pervaded the minds of the Brethren and Sisters as a general thing. Was much rejoiced in spirit myself, felt very happy. After Love Feast I held a regular preaching service. Preached from the words, "And he began to be sorrowful +c." After preaching, administered the sacrament of the Lord's Supper for the second time in Chinese all alone, though the time before I was assisted in the distribution of the elements by Dr. Wentworth. Have offer assisted in the distribution of the bread + wine. After all these exercises, ate a lunch, lay down on a bench to rest my aching back for a few moments, then left with Qong Mi after bidding the brethren a goodbye, and arrived at Ngu Kang at 3 P.M. Being weary, lay down and took a nap for an hour or so then arose much refreshed. Went and sat in

front of the Chapel and conversed with Qong Mi. Spying a temple on a hill opposite, asked him to tell me about the business done there. He informed me that in the 11th + 12th month a lottery is opened there, people get together, men women + children and try their fortune. Women often steal their husband's money and put it in hopes of doubling it so they may have money for their own use; if unsuccessful, [176] for fear of the wrath of their husbands whose money they have appropriated and lost, they often throw themselves into the river or take poison + thus destroy life. Boys often steal their parents' money and try their chance, and if unsuccessful, in order to place the money back they turn thieves + pickpockets. If the officers find out that such business is going on they send men to arrest the offenders, but a few hundred cash will often bribe the constables and they go back and report there is no such business going on or they can not find the offenders and thus the work of darkness goes on. While contemplating the mountains in the distance, so high seemingly piercing the heaven. Tong Mi remarked that he was reminded of his boyhood, before he had heard of the doctrines of Jesus. He was up in a loft in his father's house, a small door was open, so he could look out on the hills and mountains. While there he mused on death, he thought of his father dying, his mother, brothers + sisters, and of himself. He said he had a great dread of death and could not bear the idea of dying; he wished he had a ladder so he could climb up to heaven and he proposed, when he should become a man, [177] he would go to some of the high mountains in the distance and he would surely climb to heaven.

Preached in the evening from Heb. 2 : 1-2-3. Slept well after being wakeful for some time. The rats made some noise which awoke me at times.

Sept 1862

Sept 1st. Left Ngu Kang at 8 A.M. Arrived home 1/2 past 10 A.M. Took my lesson in Chinese. Maclay called. Afternoon went to Rev. C.C. Baldwin's to attend monthly concert. Mary went, too. Very good time. Bible class in the evening.

Sept 2nd. Today at home. Studied and wrote and read. Took a nap after dinner. Maclay's called in door-yard just at night. Mrs. Maclay is fast for buying a cow or two. Think I will try and help her get one. Lau Chuo called in the evening to ask about the Gibsons.

Sept 3d. This morning coolie drove off my youngest cow so I am in hopes in a few months she will give milk.

4th. Today usual duties. Afternoon went to Tâ Ting. A very good time. Kien Taik preached and answered a great many questions.

[178] **Sept 6th.** Today moved back into our own house. Find it very pleasant to be back again to our old quarters. At night very tired, retired early.

7th. Today preached in Chinese at Tieng Ang Tong. Also went to Quang Ing with Ing Quang and he discoursed to a promiscuous company. Attended American service at 5 P.M. Bro. Maclay preached a very good sermon from "I have heard of thee by the ear, but now hath mine eye seen thee +c". Evening Bible class, finished the book of Esther and read a few psalms.

20th. Today took Ing Quang and went to my country appointment. Arrived there about 10 o'clock at night.

[Vol 1 Part 9: Sept 21st, 1862 – Dec 31st, 1862]

21st. This morning after breakfast went to Que Kang [?] and held service in the forenoon, Ing Quang did the preaching. I closed by prayer and led the class meeting. After closing the services at Que Kang came back to Ngu Kang to dinner and then held service with the brethren, Ing Quang doing the preaching. In the evening held a prayer meeting. Before sundown went and called on a brother living at Tong Qong [?], [179] a beautiful sequestered spot far up the hill + then down in a sort of valley. The house sat close by the hill which shaded it on the south from all the direct rays of the sun. Living here was a brother with a very bad leg and a sore foot preventing him from walking so far to church. Talked with him + his family some time. Ing Quang prayed and we bade them goodbye.

22nd. Came home early, having finished up my quota of labors in this part of the country work for the year. Bro. Sites will soon move to Ngu Kang. The repairs on the house are progressing.

23d. Today went into the city to see if I could find a suitable location for a house and if so to make an effort to buy. Lo Tang led the way, went to the Nong Muo Sang + to to [sic] the Ping Sang and went to several Chinese temples + houses, did not have satisfactory success. Several places are eligible if they can be obtained as a reasonable price. The brethren Lo Tang + So Char will aid in making the proper inquiries.

Returned home about 4 o'clock very much tired.

[180] **25th.** Today again went to the city to make further inquiries for a place to build a house. Visited several but nothing decided was agreed upon. Took dinner at Bro. Woodin's. Came back to Ta Ting and saw that the church was opened for preaching. Stayed an hour or two and then came home. It was nearly night.

28th. Today preached at Tieng Ang Tong in Chinese from "Let brotherly love continue".

Attended Sabbath School. Bro Sites has infused life into it and it is quite interesting. Bro Brinkley preached to us at 5 P.M. His sermon was carefully prepared and read very well. His best effort in the church to which I have listened.

29th. To[day] commenced our Annual Conference for the year beginning with Oct 1st. It consisted of reading the scriptures + some remarks by Bro Maclay in Chinese. After which, each brother was called upon to speak of his work during the past year, his successes, his trials + encouragements.

[181] **30th.** Regular Monthly Mission Meeting at Bro Maclays. Settled up accounts and then arranged our work for the coming year. I have assigned to me the city as my center of operations, and Lo Ngnong to assist during the year once or twice as I may find it convenient. The latter place is distant some two days journey, on the east side of the mountains.

OCT

1st. Today meeting with the Native Helpers at Tieng Ang Tong. Scriptures were read and commented upon by Maclay. Each brother had his work assigned him, after which they all prayed, and then spoke. Ching Mi has refused to go to his field. Kim Tock, who was down for the country stayed away altogether and has withdrawn from the regular work. He demands higher pay which the Mission are not prepared [to] give him as yet.

[182] **2nd.** Today went to the [city] again to continue my search for a building lot and also to get a site for a Chapel or Church for the public preaching of the word. Am in hopes this day's inquiries will result in getting a place to live or to preach. Got home about 3 P.M. Today Maclays went to the Anchorage in the Mission Boat. Lo Chai is my Native Helper. May the Harvest Lord greatly aid me in my work in the city in preparing my way and in the publication of his truth. My helper is but a mere child in the scriptures and in the experiences of the Christian Life. I can speak but imperfectly, so that I shall labor under embarrassment.

5th. Sunday preached in Chinese at Tieng Ang Tong in the morning from the 10th Chapt. of Mark commencing with the 46 verse to the end of the Chapt. about Christ healing blind Bartimeus. Afternoon went to Kuang Ing Chang. Lo Chai preached to a crowded house. About two o'clock Mrs Sites gave birth to a daughter. This evening Bible Class as usual. Afterwards Lo Chai repeated his Bible lesson in Matthew.

[183]

Oct. 1862

7th. Today at an early hour went into the city to visit several places offered for sale. First went to see land on the south + southwest of the Black Stone Hills. Then went to see a house near the Back Street (An ke), then visited a shop on the Seing Tak ke, then on[e] on the East Street Teng ke. This done, I went to the Ping Sang K'a to look of [sic]

C.R. Martin Diary, Volume 1 Part 9 Page 2

some land for building a dwelling, partly offered a thousand dollars for a piece of ground 200 ft by 130, large enough for two houses. Got home about 5 o'clock. Bro Brinkley called in the evening an[d] sat a while.

11th. Today went with Maclay to the city, desiring him to inspect some land which I have found where I shall be pleased to build a house for my own residence.

12th. Today is Sunday, held service at Ati [?]. Ing Quang preached. Afternoon to [with?] Lo Chai to Quang Ing where he preached to a well filled house.

At 4 P.M. I preached in English at Heavenly Rest Church.

[184] **13th.** Took Maclay to the city to look of some vacant land and the north east slope of the "Rain Mountain". He seemed to be much taken with it.

This evening Bible Class, finished the 119th Ps.

14th. Today went to the Anchorage with Brinkley, first called on board the "Jacob Bell", Capt. Frisby. Mrs. F- is with him and a little boy. One of the boys, Thomas Song is a Native of N.H. + hails from Sanbornton Bridge. He was acquainted with very many preachers in the N.H. Conf. whom I know. His mother is a Methodist and Bishop Baker often calls at her house. He was a pleasant boy, I hope to see him again. Got back about 3 o'clock P.M. Capt. Frisby came up about the time we did. We called at Forster's and he came up + called on the Mission with Bro Brinkley.

19th. Today preached at Ati in forenoon. Afternoon went to Quang Ing Chang with my Native Helper who preached quite earnestly to a crowded house for over an hour.

[185] **21st.** Today went to the north part of the city to look of some land offered for sale. Came across George Smith on my [way] out and went with him to his building lot on the back street where he is erecting a chapel. Afterward came back to his chapel on the South Street and took a lunch with him and stopped a little time. Got home about two o'clock P.M.

22nd. Today went to the city again. Visited a house for sale on the Back Street, and one on the West Gate Street. I have been pretty nearly over the city in my researches for a place of residence and for a place to preach the Gospel.

23d. Today went with Bro Sites to look of the place where I took Maclay a few days ago at the foot of the Black Stone Hills. He did not seem pleased with the situation.

This evening Bro Maclay preached the Quarterly Sermon to the Native Helpers at Tieng Ang Tong from Acts 15 : 36.

24th. The Examination of Native Helpers in scripture doctrine on the being and attributes [186] of God. Bro. Maclay of course was [?] the examining committee. Bro's Sites and Brinkley were present for a little time. The number of Helpers was eight, all of which are members of our Church except one, who belongs to the "Church of England Mission", but who providentially has become connected with our work in the country so that with the consent of the above Mission we employ him for the present.

25th. Examination of Native Helpers continued this forenoon. Afternoon + evening nothing in particular.

26th. Today Sunday. Quarterly Meeting at Tieng Ang Tong. Love Feast at 10 o'clock led by myself, preaching at 11 by Maclay + after Communion administered by the same assisted by Martin.

Afternoon went to Quang Ing Chang with Lo Chai, where he preached to the mission and a few others from "Buy the truth + sell it not".

Proverbs.

Evening Bible class; finished the Psalms.

27th. Quarterly Conference at Tieng Ang Tong, Bro Maclay in the chair. Among other [187] things done Hu Po Mi's license to preach was renewed and given back to him.

28th. Today at home. In forenoon went with Lo Chai to Maclay's to see about his case. It seems that in the north part of the city where I have tried to get some land for building a house, the neighborhood people, stirred up by some of the candidates for office in that quarter, have set themselves to oppose my getting a place offered to me for \$16.00. Hand Bills are posted up admonishing any man who does privately sell a piece of land in that part of the city that he will be arrested and severely beaten by the populace. This not seeming sufficient, they have reported Lo Chai as the cause of the Land movement +c. And we hear that constables are sent out for his arrest under false pretenses. My idea was to report the case to the Consul. Bro. Maclay shoves it off like he does [188] like he does [sic] everything else that has importance and responsibility about it.

29th. This forenoon sowed dome onion seed in my garden. Also spent some time in getting out a plan of doctrine on man for the next Quarterly Examination of the Native Helpers. Afternoon went to the city to distribute some books, talk as I might have opportunity, and also to

continue my search for a building site. Saw posted up in a great many conspicuous places notices warning any man from selling to a foreigner either a house or land in that quarter of the city, i.e., at the screen hill. Called at Hartwell's and got some Chinese hymn books. Evening prayer meeting.

31st. Today Mission Meeting. Was appointed committee or was authorized to buy a lot of land for two building sites at the Screen Hill for a sum not less than (\$16.00) Sixteen Hundred Dollars. Also was authorized to buy a house on the East Street for a Chapel for a sum not exceeding Twelve Hundred Dollars. Afternoon went to the north part of the city to preach Jesus and distribute some books.

Today got a note from Bro. S.L. Baldwin. He had safely arrived in Hong Kong on the 23rd inst. Expects to be here by the 15th prox.

[189] **Nov 1st.** Prepared myself today for tomorrow's exercises.

2nd. Sabbath. Preached at Tieng Ang Tong in the forenoon. Afternoon went to the Chapel of Goddess of Mercys Well. Lo Chai preached. Maclay preached in English at 4 P.M. Congregation small. Just as we came home from service saw the mail flag flying. Sent directly for letters + papers. Got a letter from Baldwin written of "Java Head".

3d. This forenoon entered a complaint to the U.S. Consul against certain parties who are hindering my purchasing land in the city at the Screen Hill. The Consul was very willing to send into the Prefect for an explanation +c.

Afternoon went to the city to attend the Regular Monthly Prayer Concert held at the house of the Rev. C. Hartwell's of the A.B.C.F.M. Present: Hartwell, Pert. Baldwin, Wooden, Smith, Wolf, Martin. Ladies: Mrs. Hartwell, Baldwin, Woodin, Maclay. The Misses Woolston, Mary Hartwell, Emily + Charles Hartwell + Sarah Baldwin. The meeting was held rather late. It was sometime after dark when I got home.

4th. Today went to the city to preach and distribute books, went to the north part part [sic] of the city. [190] The people ready to listen + but little abuse. Were disturbed once during preaching by the runner of some official who ordered the people to scatter to their homes, but who on seeing me was a little abashed and proceeded without further action.

On my way back went to see some houses offered for sale on the "Genii Pagoda Street." They did not strike me favorably. There are too few people on the street, and it is an out of the way place.

9th. Today preached in Chinese at Ati in the forenoon. In the Afternoon at 4 o'clock preached in English at Tieng Ang Tong my sermon on John.

Besides our mission there were present Mr. + Mrs. Consul Medhurst of Shanghai, Mr. + Mrs. Clark of Russell + Co, Mr Schenck of the Customs.

10th. This day at dinner with us were Mr. Sites and Mr. C.C. Baldwin. After dinner went with Mary to Po Na Sang and called on all there. On the way back stopped and bought about \$5. worth of cotton cloth.

11th. Today went to the city; went first to look of a house, then to preach and distribute books. Preached on the West Gate Street to a crowd. [191] The people very eager to get books, the boys very saucy. I had to strike one boy for snatching. Distributed forty copies of Matthew.

17th. This morning at about 8 o'clock My Wife gave birth to a second son whom we have named Lucious [sic] Allen.¹ His mother is doing well. Last night the Baldwins arrived from America + the Gibsons from Japan all in tolerable good health. Baldwins stop with us.

24th. Since the confinement of my wife I have stayed mostly at home and of course have little to record. The Baldwins brought some things from America which came in very good time generally. Mary is getting on very well. So is baby.

29th. Today Mission Meeting. Resigned as secretary + nominated Baldwin in my stead who was elected.

30th. This morning attended Chinese Service, Gibson preaching. Afternoon Maclay preached in English from "Come unto me all ye that labor + are heavily laden +c." Evening at home.

[192] **Dec. 1st 1862.** This forenoon went down to see Mr. Weller, Acting Vice Consul of U.S.A. about my land offer in the city, did not make out to find him. Called into a new tailor establishment and learned the price for making coats to be \$2.00, pants, 75 cts. Came home, went into the Printing Office where I found Baldwin.

Afternoon at 3 o'clock attended Monthly Concert for prayer held at Bro. Maclays + led by him. At 5 o'clock took Eddie out on the hill with the Baldwins but came home earlier + sooner than they.

Today teacher Ling commenced work for Baldwin. I have had him ever since my arrival here + only part with him on the ground that I can study with my Native Helper nearly all I wish to.

2nd. Today in forenoon soon after breakfast went over to Maclays to buy some clothes formerly worn by a young man who was drowned in the river Min. Bought \$14. worth viz 1 over coat \$6., 1 pair of broad cloth

¹ *Transcriber's Note: The spelling, I believe, should be "Lucius".*

pants \$3., 1 light colored coat \$1., 2 pair of drawers \$1. Went to the city and preached + came home before 2 o'clock P.M.

Tailor brought home Broad Cloth he has been making for \$3. Wrote some on a sermon.

[193] **3d.** Forenoon translation meeting which I attended till 12 M. Before dinner went with Eddie to printing Office. After dinner composed some + wrote some on sermon. Went to the hill with Eddie. Evening went to the prayer meeting at Maclay's.

8th. Today made writings for a Chapel in the city on the East Street. I closed the bargain for the place last week. Can take possession in about a month. Thus has providence opened up a place in the city for me, a preaching place. I pray that very many souls may be converted there + turn to the true God. Paid for the House \$1,220.

12th. Today in forenoon went to the city and preached at the head of the north gate street. Lost my Helper and so had to hold forth all alone. Came home about two o'clock. Spent some of the afternoon in reading and some in the Printing Office. Evening meeting with Helper to give him some instructions on next Quarter's Examination.

13th. Met this forenoon at Panasang with a committee from the other missions to arrange the order of exercises for the week of prayer in Jan. next, proposed by the Evangelical Alliance. That committee were Revds C.C. Baldwin + John R. Wolfe.

[194] After dinner called with Mrs. Baldwin at bro. Brinkley's and then at the Foundling Asylum and then at the Printing Office. Evening at home.

14th. Today Sunday. In forenoon went to city and preached in front of the prefecture to a large congregation on repentance. My Helper talked also on various subjects.

Undertook to and did distribute books but it was with great difficulty so eager were the people to get them. I do not think I shall distribute many on the street hereafter. There is danger of being crushed as well as having all the books snatched away by boys and the illiterati.

Afternoon attended American service at our Church. Rev. S.L. Baldwin preached. There were several outsiders in, among others three sea captains, Winchell of the Sam. Russell, White of the Ringleader and [short blank space follows here].

21st. Today Sunday forenoon went to the city to preach, turned up the East Street, went as far as my chapel just bought, + halted a few minutes; then went on to the temple of the "Heavenly Holy Mother"; took our station on the steps of the same and discoursed for a long time to a large crowd of people that gathered about. Returned about 1/2 past 1 P.M.

This after[195]noon at the American church. Bro. Brinkley preached from "Why art thou cast down" +c.

23rd. This morning at an early hour this morning 6 o'clock kissed my wife + babes and left Fuh Chau for the large district city of Lo Nguang distance some 60 or 70 miles. About 8 o'clock arrived at the Anchorage where we lost the tides; eat breakfast, jogged along at a slow rate till we reached the small Lortar city of Tong Siu where we went ashore. There being several persons standing about our landing place and in a temple of the Holy Mother or as some say ancestral grandmother. They wanted to know our business. We told them we were going to a distance [sic] place and stopped there to preach the gospel while waiting for the next ebb tide. They wanted us to preach there which Ing Quang + Lo Chai did. Before we left this place one of the listeners asked me if I was not the man that he heard preach in the city a few [days] ago at a certain [place]. I was at the place he specified in the city the Sunday previous and hence he must have been in the crowd of listeners on that day, As [?] while we preach the gospel in one place, from that place it may sound out to a great distance.

From this place we went further [196] on till we came to the market of the city composed mostly of Fuh Chau houses + Fuh Chau residents. Here we had a large congregation for an hour who listened most of the time with seeming interest.

From this place went into the city itself. The houses were a little different of those of the Chinese generally. I saw but few shops. There is evidently trading done in the city, but on a small scale. Saw several ladies + young girls. They do up their hair a little different from the Fuh Chau ladies and do not bind their feet. The people talk but little except the court dialect. Hence could not understand much of the preaching we gave them. Came back to the boat after an absence of about two hours. The tide had not yet turned. Prepared a dinner and ate it at the landing, still waiting for the tide.

While preaching, Ing Quang said that Confucius might be compared to a candle, which could light but a small room, that room was China. Jesus was like the sun that could enlighten the whole world. After dinner was over, the tide favoring, came on to Quang T'an where we arrived about four o'clock P.M. Failing to get chairs, we provided ourselves with straw shoes which we tied to the bottoms of our others and came on over the mountain, which Ing Quang declared to [be] [197] "Hill Difficulty". Just at the top of the hill are some very large trees which we saw before we left the boat. At this point we could see the city of Lieng Kong away down in the valley two or three miles away. We were soon down the mountain and traveling on a paved road with here + there stones displaced and nearly all beneath the water and covered with mud. Here our straw shoes or sandals were of excellent service in preserving our nicer shoes of destruction and our feet from getting our feet [sic] thoroughly soaked

thus exposing our health. Lo Char thought this road might be called the slough of dispond. Before getting to the city we passed a bridge about the width of the small bridge at Fuh Chau which spans the Lieng Kong River. It was some time after dark before we arrived at the south gate of the city, but finding it open, walked in with my baggage train following; passing along the street it was so dark but few people observed me as we had no lamps. Now and then a man or a boy would catch a glimpse as we passed some well-lighted shop and cry out "foreign devil". We proceeded at once to find a place to lodge. The first tavern was full but we found another soon with two empty rooms which we engaged for the night for one hundred and twenty cash a man, including rice for supper and breakfast. My room was up stairs with a [198] lattice window all open but which I did not perceive till next morning. However, I took no cold.

Several officers of the government were lodged under the same roof. I was not troubled with a crowd in my room or about the room as I feared. In the evening wrote to Mary to be taken to her by the boatmen in the morning. Had prayers. Went to bed on boards, slept soundly.

24th. Arose this morning refreshed, added a few lines in my note to my wife and dispatched the boatmen with [it] to Fuh Chau with instructions to be at the landing at Quang T'an next Monday to take us home Tuesday morning. After washing, brushing +c, breakfasted on Rice + Chicken Curry, read the scriptures, prayed and started anew for Lo Nguong on foot because the chair bearers wanted so enormous a price (700 cash) for half the way. For the first few miles the road was very muddy and we met a great many men and women carrying loads into the city, hence the constant turning out to let them pass was very trying to patience + shoes, and somehow the grass shoes did not fit so well as yesterday, but still onward we went in good spirits across the paddy fields, by the side of a creek, then by a pond, now by a temple, now across [199] a bridge, now up hill then down hill, now crooked now straight until we came to a Rice Eating Shop where we hired two chairs to take us to Tang Tong, a place half way to Lo Nguong for 400 cash a chair. The chairs were of the simplest construction, two poles with a small seat + back tied on with ropes and a slat still lower and forward for the feet. The coolies bore these with ease and travelled quite rapidly where the road was level, but from the above place the road was very hilly and consequently our speed was slow. Our route was through a part of the country thinly inhabited. Here and there in the distance might be seen a small hamlet, and once in about 3 miles we came to an Eating place. Met with nothing of importance by the way. Saw one very large dwelling house inclosed with a wall. It had the appearance of wealth. Perhaps it is a country mansion of some great lord of the Soil, or of some retired merchant or some other lucky John. A short distance from where we halted for the night we crossed a small stream on large high stones placed across the stream a

step's distance from each other, leaving a narrow place between for the water to pass on to the sea.

About 4 o'clock P.M. arrived at Tang Tong and put up at a Tavern with a little better accommodations than the one last. Our waiter was very attentive. Curry for supper. Read the scriptures and retired.

[200] **25th.** Christmas, away from home. Hope my family have enjoyed it. Wish I could see them. But Jesus is with me here. Arose this morning entirely refreshed from the weariness of yesterday's walk and ride. The waiter came in and said there was a fire about midnight a [sic] but a short way off. If we had known, it might have disturbed our sleepers [sic]. Ate Rice + Curry for breakfast, packed up, committed ourselves to God in prayer, got into our chairs which we had engaged to take us to Lo Nguong the night previous for 500 cash a chair. The weather was rainy after the drizzle drizzle style which continued throughout the day without cessations but our umbrellas kept it off so we got wet but a little. The wind was chilling so that after riding for some time was glad to walk to keep warm. The greater part of the way today was by the side of a small, rapid stream which kept up a constant roar as it glided down over the rocks + over its pebbly bed. The country on either side was mountainous. The valley was all along thickly inhabited and well cultivated. There was a great deal of beauty, much of wildness about the whole route. The road was good, paved the whole way. About 4 miles from Lo Nguong we came to where two mountains whose bases came within a short distance of [201] each other just leaving a pass on a level with the road. Across this pass was built a high wall the same as about a city, through which was only one door. A short distance from the wall and on a spur of the mountain was a tower from which one could see a great distance. No doubt this wall + tower was originally designed to guard this pass. Except the wall + tower I saw nothing warlike. From this wall we commenced descending a long hill. Half way down came to a small village, here the road bent round a towering hill and in a short time off in the distance could be seen the long desired city of Lo Nguong sitting in quietude on the south foot of a towering hill right over the top of which could be seen the wall running in a regular height. At our left as we descended the hill was a small mountain brook along the banks of which I counted five Grist Mills for grinding wheat and off to the left were fields of Cane not yet cut in the midst of which was a Sugar House in operation as could be told from the fire + smoke + steam. Before we reached the suburbs we crossed this stream over a fine stone bridge, + over a gulley by another as good though smaller. Arriving in the suburbs halted at a Bank while Lo Chai went into the city to find lodgings for the night + for our stay.

[202] While here Ing Quang gave the wondering people a short talk of the subject of God + the Trinity. He was broken off by the arrival of Lo Chai who who [sic] greeted us with "Go in, Go in" indicating he had found quarters for all. Luckily he has a sister living here, on whom he called

first to see if she could entertain us. She not having room directed him to a new Lodging house where we directed our steps and found tolerable accomodations in an upper room of the same. It must have been about 3 P.M. when we entered the city by the west gate. Our lodge is but a short distance from the Nia Mouny. Supped on Fish, bread, rice + potatoes. In the evening the husband of Lo Chai's sister came in. He was very pleasant and invited me to call at his house on the morrow. We had prayers before he left, he joining us in reading the 10th Chapt. of John. Lo Chai prayed very earnestly, even with tears, for his sister's husband + his sister and for the city +c. Lo Chai has gone to stay with his sister tonight. Ing Quang is down stairs preaching the gospel to the household. May the leaven work. It is thus far a good beginning. O for the Heavenly [pon???] on the Helpers + myself. My heart goes [203] up in prayer for a blessing on our efforts for the next 3 days we may spend in the city. May some household be converted before we leave. I labor + wait to see what God will do for us here, for ours is Christ + Christ is ours. Wrote to Mary.

26th. This morning before I was up the man came for the letter to take home. I added a few lines while yet in bed, sealed the letter and dispatched it further in hopes it may be delivered tomorrow night to my family. Arose after a quiet rest for my first night in Lo Nguong. Washed, dressed + combed as usual and ate a hearty breakfast of pork and rice. After prayers we took a bundle of books and went out for a preach. Stopped at the shop belonging to Lo Chai's brother-in-law. A crowd soon gathered about and Ing Quang, Lo Chai talked in turn for a long time. While yet in the shop, a man of fifty or sixty of good address + kindly bearing, evidently a Roman Catholic, came in and made a great many inquiries about the doctines. He seemed well posted up in a general knowledge of the cross. Spoke of the savior and his suffering under Pilate with much reverance. Promised to come in tonight and make further inquiries. After this we went [204] down the street a few hundred yards and took our station at a cross street and held forth for sometime longer, then went down in front of the Tuai To Nga Moimg and preached a very long while to a very still crowd, then we came back, stopped a moment into Lo Chai's relations' shop, took a cup of tea and then came back to our lodgings. While eating, Tiffin had a call from the Lo Nguong Kaing. The son of the District Magistrate and another man came in. I invited them to a seat and some tea. They talked Mandarin so I could not understand very well. But Lo Chai came in soon and entertained them with an account of our business. They were very pleasant and polite in their fashion. I understand on my first arrival last night the neighbors discharged their duty of informing the Magistrate that a foreigner had come into the city. I conclude he is satisfied to let me stay till I get ready to leave.

This evening had several calls among whom were two well-informed Roman Catholics. They made several inquiries which, being answered,

they with an air of much joy declared we were the same with them. It took some time before [205] they were convinced there was any difference, and I doubt if these were fully convinced when they left. They knew the outlines of Christian doctrine, could repeat the Commandments with one exception, that was the second. They said there was a Priest some thirty miles from here. They evidently had never heard of the protestants else they would have avoided us. They were pleased to get our books. They took away a copy of John's gospel and one of Burns' Hymns. I regret we did not bring some whole copies of the bible. After they left others came in. One man from the Custom House, whose only desire was to see the foreigner. Lo Chai's brother-in-law brought in two who seemed to have some interest in the doctrines. Before they left we read round and Ing Quang prayed. Soon after, they all left. Lo Chai spent the night with his sister. Soon after, I went to bed and for a long time there was so much loud talking in the house, by men women + children, I did not get to sleep till eleven o'clock or after. The hard bed begins to feel harder every night. However, got a very good night's rest.

27th. This morning before I arose, the sun had come out in beauty. The day was propitious for preach-[206]ing the gospel. After the usual preludes to going out on the street were over we went to the outside of the North gate and held forth to a large well-behaved crowd for a long time. Several Roman Catholice came about us with their usual questions. There must be a great many of them in and about the city. How sad that they are so far from the safe way. Yet there was something about them which made you feel they after all are brethren. Of course I know nothing of their inner life, doubtless they know but little of experimental piety, still they believe in the same God, the same Christ + the same spirit. O for the time to come when the distinctions of sects shall be so far annihilated that we may fellowship all who confess the Cross of Jesus. There were some half a dozen or more at this place. Our next place was at the outside of the west gate in a large open space taking a stone wall for our pulpit. It is an easy matter to get a crowd anywhere. After preaching till two or three o'clock we went round outside of the city wall to the south gate and from here across a bridge spanning a small stream went on across the fields, by several houses, up a hill by a flight of stone steps till we entered a temple called Sing Chin Se or Holy Water [207] temple. The first object in the temple that met the gaze was the stale, Chinese god of happiness called Mi Le. On either side were his guardian attendants called King Kong. All the same as at Ku Sang but much smaller. On the inner side, with the face looking towards the court in front of the larger part of the temple sat the image called Ui No. Next we came to an open court containing a small pond of water fed from a spring above, whose waters were emptied into the pool through a stone pipe terminating with the head of the Dragon. This pond was surrounded by a substantial stone railing. To the right + left of the pond were wide,

paved alleys leading up to a flight of stairs, ascending which we came right up in front of the Goddess called Sang Po. Off to the right was the Goddess of Mercy surrounded on either side + above by 22 Che Kings arrang[ed] in a sort of stucco work. Still further to the right and in a separate room was an image dressed in the Buddhist style with a yellow gown. The guide said it was a dead body preserved + thus arranged, but on examination it proved a humbug, the whole thing except the clothes was wood. In one hand it held a fan on which were written several characters. The image is well contrived to deceive the ignorant as no doubt it has a great many.

[208] Our guide then took us around to a natural curiosity which Chinese art has tried to improve, a monstrous stone so placed as to give room for forty or fifty persons to stand beneath it, the shape of the stone over your head being concave like the arch of heaven, a miniature stone heaven. In this cavern were arranged on three sides 18 stone images with censors in front, all ready for offering incense. Lo Chai showed his indignation by striking one of them in the face. He soon after complained of the Pok So Tiang.

From this place we were led around a winding, ascending way to a sort of loft where was a stone table around which were arranged four stone seats. Here we had a fine view of the city below. The entire city and the wall surrounding in the shape of a Chinese temple could all be taken in at one view. I can not say it was grand or imposing, but peculiar to China. From here we went up still higher to see the Coffin and woman. The Coffin was a great stone, sort of four cornered. The Woman was a high leaning shim rock with nothing to suggest a woman today are [?] but a Chinaman. Descending as we ascended we were soon back to the south gate and from there to Lo Chai's rest station. There [209] I was treated to some sort of a dish of which I tasted. Soon said sit down and came to my ladings unharmed [????]. While I was in my room eating supper, Lo Chai had gone out to buy things for the sabbath. While passing the District Magistrate's he was arrested and led in for examination before the Magistrate himself. He was asked his residence, his business here, whom he led here +c +c to all of which he gave a ready response. As the examination was going on there came in a person who knew his antedecence in Fuh Chau and told the Magistrate he need need [sic] not fear, at which the Magistrate motioned him away. This person who spoke for him invited him to sit down, brought tea + the pipe and showed him great respect + invited him to come in again +c. Thus has God delivered us from the lions. Ing Quang called on his relations tonight.

This evening very cold. The coldest night of the season this far. Trusting in God.

28th. Before I arose this [morning] heard loud, scolding talk below accompanied with blows, evidently a family row. After examination it

seems the patriarch of the house and his son got into a dispute whereupon the son drew blows on his father [210] who cried out vey loud hek ken, hek ken, someone save me, some one save me. One of my men went down and, as he afterwards said, persuaded them to stop the quarrel and make up, as it seems they did, for during the rest of the day there seemed to be a good understanding between them + peace generally in the family. This son is an opium smoker, about 35 years old. The father may be fifty five. There are 7 persons in the family 2 men 2 women 2 boys + 1 girl that cries furiously in the night, keeping us awake. The family name is Uong. I have presented the family with 3 pair of cotton stockings with which they are greatly pleased.

This morning before breakfast an old gentleman came in to see us who confessed the Roman faith. He wanted to know the exact difference between us. Yesterday he shed tears when the helpers were preaching. He said his family for the last two hundred years had professed Jesus. He has passed through one persecution. When told that he practiced things forbidden in the bible +c he replied his fathers did as he did, and he knew to do no other way. We invited him to come in to prayers but he did not seem disposed, probably through fear. After breakfast, Lo Chai and Ing Quang went over to his house and had a further talk with him and [211] his son. They brought out their prayer books which they repeat[ed] in concert. About 10 o'clock we had a Sunday service of singing, praying, reading and explaining the scriptures. This over, went down + gathered a crowd in front of the lunn to whom Ing Quang + Lo Chai proclaimed the doctrines of the Cross. The people listened very attentively, wonderingly. While they were discoursing, several small officials from the Magistracy were standing about eager to hear what was being said. They showed no disposition to disturb us. I suppose the officers are a little suspicious and feel it their duty to suppress all innovation. I think on the whole they are disposed to trust with a letting alone for this time at least. After they were through speaking, I spoke to them a little while to the great joy of the people. They outwardly if not inwardly assented to all I said. After preaching, the old man spoken of above came in and declared we were the same as himself. He took his Cross + rosary and said that was the evidence of his genuine standing in the Catholic Church.

He can hardly understand why there should be any difference in those who profess the name of Jesus. Can it be a pity that there is a difference?

Towards night Lo Chai + Ing Quang went into the Magistrate's. They were treated [212] politely. They stayed but a few moments. This evening Lo Chai's Brother-in-law came in with a few presents of the eatable or uneatable kind. I had nothing but a lead pencil to give him in return. He stayed till after prayers. He seems very friendly. I exhorted him to embrace the gospel as well as I could. This man formerly lived in Fuh Chau, but 3 years ago moved here with his family. He is a dealer in salt mostly. There are but 3 salt merchants here. Salt being a

government monopoly only 3 persons only [sic] have license to sell it to the people who must have salt. Mrs Maclay thinks one reason foreigners are sickly here is the want of sufficient strength in Chinese salt. Lo Chai went home with him. Soon after he had left and while I was writing in my diary, a noise was heard below. Someone called for the Teacher. Again, someone said the officers had come. I told Ing Quang to go down and explain any thing they might want to know. They were only the constables come to inquire more perfectly into our circumstances. They wanted to know how many foreigners were present, his name + country, how many Chinamen came with me +c. Their inquiries over, they left. Soon after, some [213] one was evidently coming upstairs, I got up to see and saw two men, one very well dressed, the other dressed in common clothes. The first talked the Court dialect, the second the dialect of the people. I invited them in, gave them a seat and some tea. On inquiry I learned the first was some sort of an officer, but could not learn which, who, or where. Sent for Lo Chai. I talked as best I could to them, showed them my writing utensils, wrote some for them to see how it was done which seemed to interest them vey much. Soon Lo Chai came and entertained them with what aid I could [get] them. Soon the second man left, and the first + Lo Chai + myself continued the conversation. I learned that this man was the second officer in the place. He wore nothing by which he might be recognized as a dignitary. Before he left he wanted to know my name, place of residence +c. I gave him several steel pens, some writing paper, some envelopes and part of a box of matches for which he thanked me. He invited me to go + see the Magistrate with him which I of course politely thanked him but declined on the ground that I was not worthy of such honor, all of which [214] he seemed to appreciate. He waited a long time and I began to think something more was to come but learned that he was waiting for a runner to light him home. Lo Chai kindly offered him the services of my boy which he accepted, and bidding me to sit down I bid him to walk slowly and made an effort to follow him to the head of the stairs, but could not make out as he would not let me, but insisted on my retiring to my room. Not wishing to dally with the man, I came back and sat down and left Lo Chai to do up the ceremony in proper shape as he seemed to be better posted up than myself. Thus has God been kind to his servants another day and given us favor in the sight of men.

29th. This morning arose at the first striking of the 5th watch, or about 5 o'clock, packed up our traps, drank some tea, had prayers, waited for the dawn of day when the city's gates might be thrown open. Bade our hosts goodbye, they kindly urged us to put up with them again if we should ever come to the city. Went down at a slow pace to the west gate, found it yet closed, however [215] the man in charge of the same soon came and unlocked + swung it open and we passed out and on through the suburbs and still on by the side of the rattling stream, over the bridges, up the long

hill, by the small village Po Tok Seu, through the mountain pass and on by several flocks of goats being driven to Fuh Chau for sale. On we came until we brought up at a place 30 li [?] from Lo Nguong called Siong Leu where we breakfasted on rice + ham + tea + Pea Nuts the lemy a cheat [???]. We did not get a chair till a short distance from Tang Tong where we stayed the second night over. We engaged the chair for 600 cash to take us to Lieng Kong. At Tang Tong we had some tea and sat a few minutes, then on riding + walking in turn till we reached Lieng Kong about 5 P.M. and from here over the mountain to Kuang Tau which place we reached at 7 or 8 in the evening. Found the Mission Boat waiting for us. Went on board. The Boatmen cooked us rice + prepared supper. We said our prayers + went to bed, or to boat as you please, tired enough, leg weary, feet broken + bleeding. Sing Se the burden bearer gave out at Lieng Kong and hired a man to take the things over the hills for 160 cash. He already had been spelled by two men at different stages. He was very much worn out. Lo Chai could hardly [216] walk, + besides coming down the mountain between Lieng Kong he fell and hurt him somewhat. Ing Quang all right and all in high glee, rejoicing in view of the numerous blessings shown us by our kind Protector above. Gave the boatmen orders to start to Fuh Chau as soon as the tide should favor which they said would be at 3 or 4 o'clock in the morning.

30th. This morning at the early hour of 3 or 4 o'clock the boatmen arose and began getting under way for coming up the river. It was not long before we were under a fine sail. The wind continued to favor till about break of day when we had arrived about to the Anchorage. After this the boatmen continued to row with the tide till half way from the Anchorage to Fuh Chau when the tide turned down. From this point the boat went heavy but by rowing + pulling they got along, after a good deal of time, to the first large Banyan tree where I landed and came the rest of the way on foot and arrived home about 9 o'clock A.M. The family + servants were at morning prayers. Came upstairs, washed + combed and brushed up so as to be in a condition to receive the folks. Was glad to find my babies well, but sorry to find Mary ailing. [217] Was at home most of the day afterwards. Called at Maclay's a short time in the afternoon towards night.

31st. Mission Meeting today. Closed up our accounts for the year. During the progress of the meeting Gibson asked what his duties were as Superintendent of the Mission in regard to two points: 1st as to Quarterly Meetings, 2nd as to the appointment of the Missionaries under his charge. To the first he replied. That it was his duty to attend and hold all the Quarterly Meetings, and appoint Quarterly Conferences and sit as chairman in the same or that his duties were the same as those of a Presiding Elder. He stated that it did not follow therefrom that he was to administer the sacraments of baptism + the Lord's supper. He did not

consider that his duty or peculiar privilege but thought the preacher in charge should attend to this. To the second he replied that he considered it his right + duty to appoint those under his supervision where he pleased without, without an approving vote of the mission. To the first answer Gibson assented. To the second he demurred, and said that if Bro. Maclay another year should appoint him to any field of labor without getting instructions from the Bishop that this was his right in the time that elapses between this and then he should not go to his field of labor. Bro Ma[218]clay said he would write home for the instructions. The meeting did not close til 1/2 past one o'clock P.M. After dinner went over to Maclay's and got an order for money and a Due Bill for my salary for the next Quarter.

Prayer meeting this evening led by Brinkley. Being the last evening of the old year he led our minds to reflect on the duty of improving the manner of our lives as they quickly pass away, and constantly watch for the coming of our Master. He read the Chapter containing the "Parables of Ten Virgins".

[Vol 1 Part 10: Jan 1st, 1863 – Sept 17th, 1863]

1863

January

1st. Happy New Year may the coming be to my family and all our mission, all our friends, our country, the Church + the world.

Spent the day in making calls on the ladies in + out of the city proper.
Evening at home. Mr. + Mrs Gibson present for a time.

18th. Sunday preached at Ati in forenoon for Bro. Brinkley. Two inquirers present + spoke in Class Meeting.

P.M. Bro. Maclay preached in the American Chapel. A very good congregation.

Evening at home. About 1/2 past 9 o'clock Rev W.G. Lea arrived from Amoy. They stopped with us and the Baldwins went over and staid with the Maclays. He has a wife + 3 children. They have come here intending to take passage for England on some English vessel that may have accomodations. Very pleasant people.

22nd. This evening Preached the Quarterly sermon before the Native Helpers from Matt. 10th 16. Preached over an hour – 5 min. over. Chinese congregation good. Of foreigners, Maclay, Gibson, Baldwin, Mrs Maclay + Miss Sallie. A few asylum present for greens. [?]

[220] **Feb 28th.** This forenoon attended Mission Meeting, but before it concluded left for Rev. George Smith's in the city to make writings for the house hired of him which he now occupies. Found him not at home, but Mrs Smith sent for him to his chapel on the South Street. After waiting half an hour or so he made his appearance and proceeded immediately to make out the form of lease. Mr. Wolfe was called in and witnessed the instrument. Went round with Smith to see the quarters he is preparing for his family, then came back and took dinner with Mrs Smith after which came home, stopping on the way to settle my accounts with the Treasurer of the Mission.

The shop I bought in the city on East St. I am having converted into a Chapel.

Expect to move into the city the first of April.

March 30th. For the past few days I have been busy in moving furniture into the city preparatory to taking my family there. Mrs. Martin has not improved so much as I could have wished nor so much as I expected. My Chapel in [the] city is not yet finished, still I have service there every Sunday. There are two or three hopeful [221] Inquirers. My Coolie + Mary's nurse are both also seeking to be good I trust.

Baptism The 25th of this month (March) our baby Lucius was baptized by Bro. Baldwin at our house. The regular prayer meeting was held there for the purpose.

April 2nd. This day moved my family into the city by boat, coming in at the "Water Word Gate" by a canal. The ride did not injure Mrs. Martin as I feared it might. So we are now in the city of Fuh Chau fairly and shall get settled after fashion before long. Mr. Smith has moved for the time being into his Chapel building on South Street.

6th. Today Bro + Sister Baldwin came in and took dinner with us. At 3 P.M. went with B- to South Street to the Monthly Meeting led by Wolfe. Through mistake another company from Nantai met at my house and held another meeting.

23d. Today in forenoon went to my Chapel on East Street. Afternoon went to the Back Street and bought some chairs for the Chapel. Was followed by a crazy man home who used [222] very threatening language, threw a large stone at my feet, said he would kill me if I did not give him some money. I got home uninjured, but walked much faster than I otherwise would. After I came into the house he went round the back side and tore down a large double door and was making [a]way with them when I went out with a large club in hand. So soon as he saw me in this threatening aspect he took to his heels and ran like a loon and pitched off into a hollow which screened him from sight. After lying there awhile he left without further mischief.

24th. Today went to my Chapel on foot. Before arriving there I felt pain in my bowels and on arriving there I had a good deal of diarrhea. Did not stay long but got a chair and came home.

25th. At home till [a]most night when the Baldwins came and stop[ped]. He and I went to the Chapel together to see if all was right. The Baldwins with us over night.

[223] **26th Sunday.** My Chapel dedicated. Present besides native brethren Revds R.S. Maclay, C. Gibson, S.L. Baldwin + wife, S.L. Binkley, J. Dolittle, S.F. Woodin. Myself administered the Sacrament of Baptism to my coolie and Eddie's nurse. Maclay preached the sermon from the words One thing have I desired of the Lord +c., and gave me a charge at

the door then dedicated the Chapel. Then followed the Lord's Supper, administered by Bro. Gibson assisted by bros Martin + Baldwin.

After these services were ended the front door was thrown open and a crowd soon filled the house when Bro Dolittle talked a little in Mandarin. Then bros Young Me + Lo Chai talked in the colloquial. The people evidently wanted to see more than hear. And I had much difficulty in keeping them quiet.

This evening services in my family with servant.

27th. This forenoon at home studying. Afternoon went to my Chapel and spent about two hours in connexion with my Helper preaching to a congregation of over a hundred [224] who in the main listened attentively and with interest. One man came in evidently in some official station who sat for a long while and when he left inquired if we had not a book to take with him. Lo Chai gave him one, of which he seemed pleased.

I feel truly thankful to God that now I have a place for the sole of my foot in this heathen city where I can stand and preach Jesus. Today I felt a burden roll off my mind. I had feared trouble, at my Chapel at first, that the people would be unmanageable and boisterous. Today has proved to the contrary. Praise the Name of the Lord. This evening at home.

28th. This morning was awakened about 1/2 past 5. by someone throwing stones at the verandah blinds. Arose, put on my pants, and went out to see, but could not see any one but heard some one beating the front door. I waited awhile; when I heard footsteps and soon the wretch made his appearance again in the side where I was standing, in the shape of the same crazy man that followed me home the 23d. I waited [225] till he came fairly to where I was standing and then threw open one of the blinds and gave a yell at him, at which he started and ran off and did not return today.

Forenoon studied. About noon went down to give a look at my garden. Corn is coming through, beans are sprouting and the other things look favorable. Afternoon went to my Chapel. A great many people came in, some to hear, some to see, some to play, but I managed to keep them very quiet considering the crowd that came in. The same man who was there yesterday who had the appearance of official standing came in with a friend. After Lo Chai was through, I talked for a time. Spoke of the gospel as the Hok Ing. After I was through, a man wanted to know what name it was I gave the doctrine I preached. I told him again, when he wanted to know what the characters were. I had brought in for distribution a few copies of Mark, the first chapter + verse of which contained the very characters, so I took up a copy and showed it to him, and this opened the way for distribution of other copies of this gospel and thus ended another session of gospel preaching in East Street.

[226] **May 29th.** Today tried my Helper on two charges 1st Adultery 2nd Smoking opium (Lo Chai). He confessed to both crimes and he was discharged from service and from the Church.

June. (Thief) Sometime near the beginning of this month the young [man] whom I had employed as teacher and who had professed to be an inquirer for some months, stole some money to the amount of a few hundred cash from Hii Po Mi and was forthwith discharged from Service and ordered to leave the premises.

I employed a man by the name of Tiong to look after the house at East Street and teach the school. This man is an inquirer also.

July 15. Today came with my family over to Bro Gibson's to stay a few days for a change. Came out in a boat in the middle of the day, very hot but a good breeze. Mary very tired, not much rest at night.

[227] **July 16th.** Today in forenoon a mission, making out the estimates for 1864. Afternoon called on Mrs. Baldwin with Eddie. The Baldwins came in and took tea and spent the evening.

17th. Lucius 8 months old today. Mrs Baldwin crazy last night – a nervous affliction – called on her during the day. Not feeling very well, spent the day mostly at home.

18th. Today stayed with Mary most of the time. Bro Gibson has gone to the Kirsang to see the Binkleys. Called during the day on Mrs. Baldwin. Found her some better. Doolittle called to see Gibson + stayed some time, went with him to the printing office a few minutes. Gibson got back about six P.M. and reported Mrs B– about the same and that she has determined to come down on the following Wednesday.

19th. Sunday. Went to the city, east street and attended one service. Nong Sing Sang preached an exegetical sermon [228] founded on the first chapter of first Peter. After meeting, called at the house of Lo Tiong, one of my inquirers and the teacher of my day school and keeper of the Chapel. Nong Sing Sang went with me. Prayed in the family, then went up to my house and got a bottle of Bay Rum. Found the Peets in usual health who are spending a few days there. Got home about 1/2 past 3 P.M. Attended American service at 5. Bro Maclay preached from the words of Paul "Whom are preach +c". This evening very hot, hot all night, no wind.

20th. Today in forenoon kept the house mostly reading and studying. About noon went with Mary over to the young ladies and took dinner there; then came over to Gibson's and got into my chair and rode to Ponasang to get Dr Lyman to fix my teeth. Found him at home, but

owing to the fact that Mrs. Dobie had come up from the Anchorage suffering from bad teeth, I gave [229] way to her and allowed the Dentist to come over to Gibson's to attend to her case. Came back and went to the Chinese Monthly concert. It was well attended, being the first one held by our own church separately from the American Board Church. Owing to a want of similarity in the use of "T???" [illegible] our mission thought it best to withdraw from the Union Monthly Concert in Chinese.

23d. Today in forenoon wrote two letters, one to Mr Allen's people + one to Mother Harriet. Afternoon went over to Dr. Lyman's and had my teeth attended to. He filled three cavities and extracted one double tooth after much difficulty and pain. **25th.** This evening went to Tieng Ang Tong and listened to a sermon in Chinese before the Native Helpers by Bro Maclay.

27th. The past few days, the older members of the Mission have been busy in attending to the Quarterly Examination of Native Helpers and yesterday occurred the regular Quar[230]terly Meeting meeting [sic]. Gibson led the love Feast. Maclay preached the Sermon from the gospel of John 1st : 14. Bro. S.B. Baldwin read the sacramental services and in connexion with others administered the Elements. At the American Service yesterday afternoon I preached the sermon from Matt. 5 : 16. Last evening Bro. Gibson preached in Chinese from 1st Cor. 6 : 19, 20. At this time our people, with one or two or three exceptions seem united in heart and word for the work of God. At 1/2 past 3 o'clock yesterday Sunday bro Gibson administered the communion to Sister Binkley in her sick room, present besides Bro. Binkley, myself + Mary. Today raining most of the time. Attended Quarterly Conference at Heavenly Rest Church. Called chair bearers to go to city but severe rains prevented. Just at night called on the Baldwins. This evening read home papers and played a game of checkers with Gibson. Have concluded to spend a few days more this side, Mary is improving so well.

[231] **31st.** Today Mission Meeting, present all the members. Afternoon went to Ngu Kang with Sites. Got there about 9 o'clock in the evening and spent the night agreeably and returned home in the morning early (**Aug 1st**) before breakfast.

Aug 2nd. Sunday. Came into the city and held the usual religious services at East Street. Opened the Chapel to outsiders. Po Mi + Lo Ling preached in turn to very good audiences.

Aug 7th. This afternoon came into the city with my family + arrived at my house about 7 P.M. in a tired but not sad condition. Think our visit over the other side has been of benefit to us for which let God be praised. During the week have commenced correcting our catechism in Chinese

and have been appointed to aid in a translation into Chinese parts of the Discipline of our Church.

8th. Today in my study. Wolfe came in the forenoon + sat a while. This evening Mary + I called on the Smiths.

[232] **9th Sindy.** At Ting Ke as usual. Talked from Matt. 5th : 16. Prayer Meeting at my house this evening. Praise the Lord for his constant goodness. Have on foot a weekly prayer meeting at alternate places the houses + homes of the native members.

10th. Forenoon in my study translating the Discipline. Afternoon went to my Chapel. Po Mi talked to a very quiet audience.

11th. Forenoon in my study. Afternoon went to my Chapel. Lo Tang preached. At one time some rude boys were yelling at the outside door. I went there to talk to them and restore quiet. I tried to shut one of the double doors but was resisted in the attempt by a fierce looking man. I talked kindly to him + requested him to give way for the door but he was unwilling to yield to me and made signs of fighting. Some persons of the better class tried to make him refrain + leave but he would not but kept on threatening and menacing. Just then Lo Tang came to talk with him and persuade him to stop, but instead of listening to him he doubled up his fist and struck him in the mouth and brought blood. [233] At that I called the Chapel keeper to go and call the Ward Constable at which he thought best to desist and left without further molestation. After this the people again came together and listened a long time attentively. I presume the whole affair grew out of offense to the remarks made there by one So Sing one day when I was not present, so I am told. Still, it might have been anger engendered on the spot.

12th. Forenoon in my study. Afternoon Prayer Meeting at my house. I led the same. Read the 4th Chapter of Heb. While remarks were being made, Mr. Hartwell made some statements worth recording as they have a bearing on the much vexed controversy concerning the proper terms for God and Spirit in China. Bear in mind that Hartwell is a Shanti man and uses Sing for Spirit. The substance of his remarks were as follows, "My helper said to me that in preaching to his countrymen he had the greatest difficulty in explaining the spirituality of God. The people had no idea of pure spirit. Materiality was so intimately associated with all their notions of God". This thought occurred to me. If the Chinese are spirit worshippers how [234] is it then so hard to explain the spirituality of one great Being who provides all things? Mr. Wolfe took tea with us and spent the evening with Maclay [?] today and tonight.

13th. Rainy all day, at times very hard showers.

14th. Forenoon in my study. Afternoon went to East Street to inquiry meeting and from there with Po Mi to visit Ting Ang, a member of the class, but who has been absent from worship for a long time. Found him at home. My talk with him was not very satisfactory. He did not call his family together at prayers though I spoke to him to do so. Did not see his wife, who is also a member of the church. He promised to come to the Chapel next Sunday. On my arrival home found the Baldwins at my house, who have come in to spend a few days. The Gibsons had been in and gone back before I got home.

15th. Forenoon in study. Maclay came about 11 o'clock and left at 3 P.M. Mrs. + Miss Smith called. Song Mi came, Went with him + called on + prayed with his sister. Walked to the South Gate with Baldwin + Wolfe.

[235] **16th Sunday.** Preached at Teng Ke and held class meeting. After class meeting, Ting Ang being present, took occasion to talk reprovingly to him for not calling his family together on my visit at his house. He did not take it in very good grace. He discouraged the idea for a weekly prayer meeting and did not engage to have it at his house in turn.

This evening Chinese prayer meeting at my house. Present only my servants, the Baldwins and Sister Tang.

17th. Today at home part of the time + away part. Away to see some land offered for sale and away again to Ching Sing Tong to attend the Chinese Monthly Concert for prayer. Bro. Baldwin accompanied, being rainy took chairs. Gibson led the meeting. He read + commented on the 17th Chapter of Acts. The meeting was entertaining.

19th. Attended weekly prayer meeting at Rev. Geo Smith's.

21st. At my Chapel today. The Hartwells at our house to tea and spent the evening.

[236] **20th.** The Baldwins went home this forenoon. We have enjoyed their visit of a week very much.

21st. Po Mi preached for me at East Street today before the Church. Prayer meeting at Sister Tang's this evening. It was a season of refreshing to the few there gathered.

24th. The fourth anniversary of my marriage. Not feeling well in body, headache, did not go to Chapel. This evening Mary prayed. God was thanked for his mercies in sparing us till this anniversary day, and in the

interim giving us two little ones. Grace was implored for aid in the discharge of our duties in our several relations.

23d.¹ This forenoon Wolfe called sometime. Afternoon went to Chapel. Lo Tang preached. A man came in evidently with the intent of breaking up the meeting, but finding he could scare no one with his ugly looks and manner, he retired.

[237] **30th.** Sunday preached from Matt. 18 - 20 at my Chapel. After services with the church opened the Chapel and Po Mi preached to a good company. No effort was made to interfere with the preaching. This evening prayer meeting at my house, no one present but my servants.

31st. Today Mission meeting. Bro Brinkley asked the mission to allow him to take Mrs. Brinkley home to the United States. His request was unanimously granted. Took dinner at Bro. Brinkley's.

Sept 11th. Today went over to Baldwin's to attend a general meeting of the committee appointed to translate the Discipline into Chinese. Completed the Articles of Religion. Called on all the Mission. Eddie went over with me.

14th. Today the Misses Woolston called on us + spent the afternoon. Wrote a note to Maclay asking for the Mission Boat to come in for Mr Smith to go out tomorrow on his way to Amoy where by the advice of his physician he is going to spend a little time for his health.

[238] **15th.** Wrote two letters for America, one to Homer [?] and one to Alma.

16th. Trip into the Country

The Baldwins came in last, and Baldwin and I started at an early hour for the other side to take the Mission Boat and proceed upon a tour in the country. Got under headway down the river about 8 o'clock A.M. and was carried by the current and tide + rowing some more than halfway to the Anchorage when the tide turned against us and we halted and went ashore and visited a small Temple dedicated to worship of the goddess who superintends over children deportment (The Mother). Called at a shop, distributed some books and talked to the people. Went out to the

¹ *Transcriber's Note: This date must be questioned. The previous entry was originally the 22nd, but was changed to the 24th; the 24th is probably correct because he refers to his wedding anniversary, which was the 24th. This subsequent entry is called the 23d, and has not been changed. If it is actually the 23d, then the entry was entered out of chronological order (extremely unlikely). It is probably actually the 25th, 26th, 27th, 28th, or 29th, since the next entry after it is the 30th.*

rice fields where they [were] irrigating the land by means of their chain pumps worked by men women + girls + boys. The girls were shy of us and ran away. When the tide again turned in our favor went on to the Anchorage. The wind was very light + the boatmen could not proceed so we stopped at a foreign jetty near the dock yard. Went into the bowling alley where [239] I for the first time in my life saw the game played. I should think it would be a very healthy game, it exercises the muscles so much. The players were mostly Pilots, if not all. After staying here some time got into the Boat again and proceeded down the river some distance below Mr. Dobie's, but the wind came on stronger than ever, the waves ran high and the boatmen [were] discouraged, so we had them turn about and draw up to Dobie's where we went ashore and put up for the night at Mr D's. Took tea, spent the evening pleasantly, had prayers and retired upstairs. The wind still blowing furiously remind[s] one of the life on the ocean.

17th. This morning got under way early. The tide being in our favor and the wind having subsided very much made some prayers and we finally about noon made Quang Tan where after dining we went ashore and proceeded on foot over the paddy fields + across the hills to Sieng Kong. Instead of going into the city we went round to outside of the wall to the west gate where we tried to get lodgings at a Tauist temple but were unable. See 2nd vol.²

[240] Texts

Jer 14th : 8th = O the hope of Israel, the Savior thereby in time of trouble, why shouldst thou be as a stranger in the land, and as a wayfaring man that turneth aside to tarry for a night?³

[242] Eureka⁴

² *Transcriber's Note: Here ends the 1st Volume of C.R. Martin's diary. It ends here only because he ran out of pages; the 2nd Volume begins in fact with a continuation of the entry for this same day, 17th Sept, 1863.*

³ *Transcriber's Note: Here on the last page of Volume 1 is apparently the beginning of a list of Biblical text references. This is the only entry.*

⁴ *Transcriber's Note: This word was written, in an elaborate and decorative script, on the inside back leaf of Volume 1. "Eureka" is the name of the ship on which Carlos and Mary Martin made their journey from New York Harbor to Fuh Chau.*

[Vol 2 Part 1: Sept 17th – Dec 3rd, 1863]

[1]¹ Po Mi went to a Buddhist Temple 3 li² from the west gate and found comfortable lodgings for us, so on we went to this building called Quang Ing Kok (virgin goddess of mercy). The temple was looked after by only one Priest. It had recently been repaired and was comparatively clean. The priest was very attentive to all our wants and, had he furnished us with a mosquito netting, should have lacked for no temporal comfort. The Rev. J.R. Wolfe of the Church Mission had early in the summer put up here and the old priest brought out his book in which he keeps an account of all who come to share his hospitality and the amount they gave him for his trouble in entertaining them or any contribution for the repairing of the Temple +c. Mr. Wolfe's name was therein recorded and the name of his merchant travelling companion with the sum of two dollars annexed for their lodgings. Part of the evening we spent in relating anecdotes to our Helpers Lo Tang + Hu Po Mi, had Chinese prayers and then wrote to our wives. I finished first and went to bed but not to sleep so thick and blood thirsty were the mosquitoes. After Baldwin finished his letter we thought best to go to another part of [2] [the] temple in hopes to find a scarcity of the little nuisances. For [a] time we were not troubled but the[y] found us out and we had little peace. I covered myself entirely up with my large shawl and so managed to sleep without being much bitten but felt a sense of suffocation. Baldwin could not endure this suffocation so let them bite away but slept little, and suffered for days from the poisonous effects of their bills.

18th. This day after breakfasting and prayers and a bath in the Sieng Hong river which runs nearby, went to the District City + preached and sold books to the amount of a few dozens. Lò Tang went with me while Baldwin + Po Mi went together. I went to four different places in the city + preached and sold books and sold others along the streets as I had opportunity. This done, went back out of the West Gate, here met a man who invited us in to his house and gave us tea and urged us beyond measure to stay with him. He took us out into his [3] fruit orchard and treated us to some fine Guavas and Sung Ngang's. Such hospitality we hardly expected to find at this place. They invited us to certainly come there on our next visit to the city and even expressed a desire that we bring our wives along with us. Here we borrowed a mosquito netting to take with us on our on our [sic] whole trip, an act of kindness we appreciated very much as it enabled us to sleep free from last night's annoyances during the whole of our tour. This family's name is l^n.

¹ *Transcriber's Note: This is a continuation of the last entry from Volume 1, dated September 17th, 1863.*

² *Transcriber's Note: Li. A Chinese measure of distance, equal to about one third of a mile. (Webster)*

There are thirteen brothers all in comparative wealth. Their dwellings are all in one compound and the yard is a fine specimen of Chinese Art. There are walks and bowers and arches, shady trees + ponds +c. Yet all is now somewhat dilapidated, [an] indication of either neglect or a want of sufficient capital to keep it in repairs. After this splendid entertainment returned to our lodgings and passed the night comfortably. At this Temple many people came in to see us and we sold a few books. Among others I noticed an old man to whom Lò discoursed for some time. I trust our example + visitings [?] [4] at this place + vicinity will do good.

19th. I arose this morning before anyone and called the rest before daylight had fairly come. All soon arose + preparations were made for leaving for Lo Ngnong. We did not stop to eat but packed up and were soon off, giving the old Priest \$1. over + above our real expenses for lodgings.

Our route lay along the side of the river which reminded me very much of the Connecticut in Vermont and the Merrimac in New Hampshire. We walked on foot some 25 lis till we came to a place called Tai Cher [Chec?]. Here we got chairs and rode to Tang Long [Song?] at this place coming to the road on which I travelled last year. The country passed through this morning was exceeding beautiful beyond description, mountains everywhere rearing their lofty heads heavenward, cultivated fields of rice, sweet-potato, Hemp, a great many variety of trees, among which were the Camphor, Guava, Tallow, Oil, Sung Ngang, [5] Percimmons, Banyan. By the side of the road and in the midst of other trees saw one very peculiar unseen by us before. I think it must be the Ratan (Calamus) or something kindred to it. The trunk near the ground was about a foot in diameter while farther up it divided into a great many branches which, leaning against the other trees, ran up to a great height, then downward to the ground nearly, then up again to a length of several hundred feet. Saw men women + children in the Hemp fields divesting hemp of its tough exterior covering. Sold some books by the way. Stopped at a way side rice shop and ate breakfast. Passed over a foot bridge across a branch of the River Lieng Kong. Beyond Tai Che saw a large overshot water wheel with short bamboo spouts tied on in such a manner to the outer edge as to dip up the water in its revolutions and empty it on the rice field close by, thus irrigating the land solely by means of water power. The construction of this irrigator might be called on the Hydraulic principle. Passed by great quantities of tea being carried to Fuh Chau for the foreign market. Passed by men loaded with cloth and various other merchandise taking into [6] the country. Saw the family country residence of someone in official standing. This was indicated by the two erect poles +c standing in front of the house. A great many goats were passed being driven to Fuh Chau for slaughter. After a good deal of parleying, got chairs for a place 10 lis this side of Lo Nguong at the usual

price 80 cash a chair for 10 lis, somewhat cheaper than last fall when I paid 500 cash from Tang Lang to Lo Ngnong. For a description of the country from Tang Long see 1st vol - Dec, 1862. It was dark when we arrived at Pah Tak and we failed to get lodgings in at the hotel or at the Buddhist Temple as we hoped, so we went on to Lo Nguong by moonlight, found the gate to the city still open, and so went up to my old lodgings of last year, and found room and a hearty welcome. One of the little boys made enthusiastic demonstrations on my arrival, ran to tell his mother and came back to me with both hands extended and grasping my hands pulled me in and ran about half crying with delight. Our quarters were upstairs and we were soon there and making preparations for bed for we were tired and sleepy. O how grateful to God we all felt that our journey [7] had terminated so pleasantly. We thanked God and Took courage.

20th. Sunday morning. About 4 A.M. heard a loud rap below and at the front door, then heard someone say the officers have come. The Landlord went to the door and I heard inquiries made as to the numbers of foreigners present, their object +c. They soon left. As soon as we were up and had taken breakfast I sent Po Mi to the District Magistrate with my passport and greetings. He soon came back with congratulations from his honor and verbal privilege to go where we pleased and preach, distribute books or for pleasure, promising to protect us from insult or disturbance. We gladly improved the favorable opportunity and as soon as preparations were made set forth. Our first effort was in front of the Hotel. A large company soon were listening and buying the books. Our next place was towards and at the North Gate of the city. Our next at the East Gate. We were entirely successful in our work, no one opposed us in our preaching or distributing books and we returned to our lodgings feeling it was good to be out on this object. A good many came to our room and made inquiries about the doctrines and bought our books.

[8] **21st.** This morning renewed operations by going down to the West gate selling books as we passed along. At the right as we passed out of the gate was a wide walk paved with stone of round shape. To the left of this walk was a small stream which noiselessly passed its water over a bed of coarse sand. By the side of this walk we took our stand on some large stones piled up at the foot of the city wall and preached for a long time the doctrines contained in the book the people so eagerly sought. It was a time of interest. Our books which we brought out with us being all gone, Lo Tang went back for some more and then we disposed of most all. We then went round towards the south gate. Coming to a fine grassy knoll by the side of a beautiful brook we sat down and counted over the cash we received and had them strung on spears of a strong grass which grew nearby. After sitting here and refreshing ourselves for a time we passed on to the south gate and crossed this stream and passed on to

the Temple I visited a year ago. For a description of the same see my journal vol. 1st towards the end.

[9] After spending some time at this temple came back and in the little hamlets from which came out lots of women + children we sold several copies of the remaining books. These people were evidently poor and many of them were from other provinces as their brouge [brogue?] indicated. Very few of them could read and they came out and bought our books as much for an excuse to see + talk with the foreigners as anything, so I judged. At the south gate we disposed of what few books we had left and were sorry we could not meet the constant demand for more. Coming to an open place where fire had cleared away the buildings, I asked Lo Tang to preach, which he did for some time to very attentive company. This done went back to our lodgings, where Baldwin had preceeded us. After resting and eating supper Baldwin and myself, followed by one of our coolies, went out of the north gate and so passed on into the country for a walk. Went through a large village where we attracted a good deal of attention the women coming to the doors in groups to look at the strangers. No abusive language was spoken. We went as far as a wayside Temple called Keng hung tong, a [10] resort of the literati for purposes of writing + study and withal for pleasure, so says my teacher the name of the building would indicate. The place was old, dilapidated + filthy. A few gods covered with dirt and otherwise disfigured showed nothing attractive to us. We returned to the city by the same road we came and went up to our room and turned in for the night. There being an unusual noise outside, added to the occasional shrieks of a flock of birds perched on the branches of a fine old tree close by and the groanings of our opium smoking landlord + the mutterings of one of our coolies who seemed to be a good subject for the nightmare all these sounds put together tended to destroy any sense of slumber that stole over us and so we slept but little. **22nd.** And when at last the noises ceased and we might have rested, some of our men who were opposed to starting for home on an empty stomach or who thought they might save a few cash by cooking their own breakfast by using the wood of an old tea chest in which the books were brought to the place got up at an extravagantly early hour and cooked their rice and ate the same [11] during which time Baldwin + I arose, and seeing all were awake and anxious to leave also ate something to stay our stomach, got everything packed up ready for a start and then sat down and longed for daybreak. Waiting long and no day appearing, we all lay down on what we best could and fell to sleep, and awaked in time to get out of the city just after daylight. Lo Tang taking the lead + loping off towards home as if something there demanded his immediate, hasty attention, a very striking contrast to the manner in which he approached the city the Saturday evening previous. Today came as far as Tai Che where we put up for the night. Had a most severe headache; after suffering a long while and trying to get rest and finding none Baldwin proposed to rub my head with

some of Perry Davis Pain Killer. This did it a deal of good and under its soothing effects I went to sleep and slept it off. The Hotel at this place was the most quiet on the whole route, there was no noise but what the chair bearers made in making arrangements to take us on in the morning. [12] I heard Lo Tang + Po Mi outside telling the people some things about the doctrines of Jesus and correcting some of their erroneous ideas about Christmas.

23d. This morning arose much refreshed and entirely free from headache. Took breakfast, went out into a back room and had prayers in English with Baldwin. Then started for home having 72 lis to travel. Took two chairs for 960 cash a chair to Fuh Chau. Our route today was entirely new to me across the mountains by the Park Liang or north road. There was a great deal of upⁱⁱⁱⁱ and downhill which made hard work for the coolies who carried the chairs. The country was rich with wild and varied scenery. Many places were the pen of the painter. I thought of my own native state, but the constant travel of burden carriers of all sorts of merchandise and the tea-shops we every now + then passed were a constant reminder I was not out of China. Some 20 or 30 lis [13] before coming to Fuh Chau came to the hills where Tea is in some quantities cultivated. Baldwin got two small plants to set out in his garden as a curiosity. Arrived home about four o'clock in the Afternoon and found our families tolerably well, though Mary said she had not been so well, had had a poor spell after having company one day. I reprimanded [her] for having company when I was away, which I hope she will heed hereafter; if not, I shall record it in this book for after generations to read how disobedient a wife she was. Thankful to the Father of all Mercies for bringing us again to the embrace of friends. O how good to be back again at home, after a tramp among half civilized people + opposed to all your ideas of propriety.

24th. The Baldwins went home this morning. I remained at home all day, doing nothing in particular.

25th. At home. After dinner Wolfe came in and invited me to go with him [14] to see the Parson Smith + Dr Eastack [Eastlack?] who he reported sick at the Old British Consulate. I went with him but found the Parson quite well and the Dr gone to the other side. Afterwards went for a walk to the West gate then to his church at the Back Street, then home a little before nightfall. Soon after, the Baldwins came in to spend the night and other purposes which the sequel will show.

26th. This morning arose early and made preparations to leave with Baldwin for Kang Chia, his country appointment. Walked to the West Gate and on to the upper bridge where we found the Mission Boat in readiness, which took us up the river slowly. About noon, coming to a

fine clump of trees on our left, went ashore and had our eatables brought and spread out on a stone and there we ate our dinner, after which loitered about till the cool breeze from the south sprung up, when we took back + proceeded to our landing before the [15] town of our destination. Walked in from the river, which was about one mile to our newly rented Chapel. Found the two helpers In Mi and Lo Ling expecting us and also Sister Cowhouse [?] at the chapel. Went upstairs + were well pleased with the cleanly appearance of things, but were soon disgusted with the dirty Chinese who made free to come up to and into our room uninvited. Baldwin made several unsuccessful attempts to get them away; this, added to the fearful noise below in the house, street and adjoining Tavern was disagreeable in the extreme. We finally had prayers, the crowd still in and about the room. We then drove them out and shut + bolted all the doors and lay down to sleep. Although the noise below still continued, we being tired soon fell asleep and had a tolerable night's rest.

27th. Sabbath morning. Arose and made the usual preparations, breakfast + prayers. Then went over to Sang Preng, met the few brethren + sisters, preached, held class. Went out back to enjoy the cool shade of fine olive trees, then went and [16] made a visit to a sick brother, talked and prayed with him. A good many of the villagers came in and In Mi + Lo Ling both gave a short preach to them. We then went back to our noisy quarters. We had no sooner got fairly got sat [sic] down to rest when as usual the crowd began to enter our room or flock about the door. I proposed to Baldwin a remedy he agreeing in which I sent for the man of whom we rent the chapel and told him our object in renting the house was to have a place in which we could have quiet and rest on our arrival or when we were tired, that since our arrival we had constantly been annoyed by a rude set unasked and not wanted, that we could not sleep or rest under such treatment and if this could not be stopped we did not want the house. This took effect. He soon cleared out the place and we were troubled no more. In the evening he sent us a present of some tea + cake to mollify [sic] our embittered feelings I suppose, for which we tried to seem thankful though we felt the contrary. Slept well.

[17] **28th.** Were called at an early hour by the Boatmen who had come for our things. Arose at once and packed up and left by moonlight which was so bright the Boatmen had mistaken for early dawn. Walked to the boat. In Mi and Lo Ling were with us on their way to the Annual Conference. I lay down and got to sleep, had not slept long when I was awakened by Baldwin saying Lo Ling had jumped overboard. I asked why he had done so, Baldwin said he supposed to drown himself. The boatmen swung the boat about as rapidly as possible and we soon had hold of him by the hair of his head and his clothes and drew him into the boat. He seemed thankful that his life had been saved. We then demanded an explanation and he satisfied us he did not jump in but fell

overboard on account of having only one hand could not save himself. It was a very narrow escape and had the wind been high would have been drowned without doubt as he could not swim and only one hand. He luckily had a change of clothes with him. About six arrived at the upper bridge, sent the [18] boat back to wait for the Sites who are coming down to attend the conference exercises. Walked into the city and arrived home a little before eight o'clock, in good time for breakfast. Today at home. The Baldwins left about nine o'clock for their home.

29th. At home all day writing a good share of the time. Studied some. Afternoon several Chinese + Chinese boys called to see the house. Evening at home.

30th. This morning after breakfast took a chair and rode over to Nantai to attend the monthly meeting of the mission for business. Made a written request that the Mission allow me the privilege to take Mrs. Martin to Amoy or Swatow when convenient to stay a month or six weeks for the improvement of her health. This request the Mission kindly granted but provided that the time be unlimited, shorter or longer as it should seem best to me. Took dinner at the Gibson's. Called on all the members of the Mission. The Sites were at Maclays. Got home about dark. Took my [19] watch over when I went and left it at a Chinese shop to be fixed. Mrs. Binkley did not seem so well today as usual, is evidently failing. The Sites look as healthy as usual. Their baby is fat as she can hold.

October

1st. Today went to Nantai and led a prayer meeting in connexion with the Annual Chinese Conference. The Church was pretty full and the meeting quite interesting though much too long, some of the foreign ladies especially Mrs. S.S. Baldwin became very tired. The brethren wanted to pray and some prayed inconsistently long. Took dinner at the Binkleys and stayed there till after 3 o'clock P.M. then came over to Baldwin's, went with Baldwin into the Printing Office and got ten copies of a Chinese translation of the hymn "Forever with the Lord" by Rev R.S. Maclay arranged to the tune of "There'll be no Sorrow there". Came home arriving at five o'clock P.M. Went over to Wolf's to ask him if he will let Mrs. Binckley come over to his house to spend [20] a few days for a change. He seemed very glad to thus accommodate them. He came over and took tea with us and spent the Evening.

2nd. At home today. Rainy. Teacher did not come. In my study a share of the time. Wrote several notes and sent to Nantai by coolie.

3d. Today at home. Teacher came. Gibson here to dinner and spent part of the afternoon. Pleasant call. He told about the Conference exercises more fully than I had otherwise heard. Song Mi came in to go to the Chapel with me but, having company did not go myself but told him he might go down and see what was needed to make his family comfortable.

4th. Today Sunday. Went to East Street and held service. Song Mi preached from the 8th Chapter of Matthew – Christ healing the leper. After service on account of a death opposite the Chapel and the making of a coffin, there being more or less noise did not open the Chapel to the crowd but took Tong Mi and called on Mother Ngu. Talked with her, read the Scriptures and prayed.

[21] **5th.** Today Tong Mi was sent for and I went with him to the Chapel and took into consideration, how and how much to repair the dwelling part. Told him to call the carpenter and bargain with him as to the probable cost +c. Came home, took dinner, and went over to Nantai to attend the regular monthly concert for prayer for the conversion of the world. A general attendance. Sites' baby was baptised. Got my watch at the Chinese jewellers and paid him a dollar for repairing it. This evening Wolfe called in and sat awhile. Today he got a note from Mrs. Smith from Amoy, stating Mr. Smith had been worse but now better again and they hope to return by next mail.

6th. At home writing in forenoon. Tong Mi called with the carpenter and estimated for the job of repairing the parsonage at East Street which was some more than 18 000 cash. I gave him the job and paid him four dollars (\$4) bargain money. A man called professing to wish to learn the doctrines and become a Christian. I talked with him considerable but could not satisfy myself as to his real character. I gave him some books and he said he would be at the Inquiry Meeting on Friday. Mrs. C.C. Baldwin called in the afternoon. Played a game of chess with Mary and two more in the evening, she checkmating me twice, I her once.

[22] **7th.** This forenoon at home. Afternoon went to the weekly prayer meeting held at Mr. Hartwell's. Walked home with Miss. Smith.

Today got a note from Mr. Binckley in which he reminded me of the presence of Dr. Jones in Fuh Chau and that Mr. Gibson thinks I ought to call him to consult with him on Mrs. Martin's case. I wrote in reply that I had good and satisfactory reason for not doing so during the three days he remains here, that I was sorry he leaves so soon.

8th. Today at home writing. Sent a note to Mrs. Baldwin with the hymns for next Sunday. Rec'd a note from Baldwin repeating the sentiment of Gibson in the form of a question. Why does he not call Dr. Jones +c? To this note I replied at length. Coolie brought back some papers for me to read.

9th. To[day?] at home in forenoon perparing a sermon. Borrowed five dollars of Wolfe and sent coolie over to Gibson's for \$2.5, which he got for me. This afternoon went to the Chapel and held inquiry meeting. The young man here last Tuesday + who promised to be on there was on hand. He seems to be in earnest about something. I hope it is his soul. Tong Mi was not present. This evening at home. Played a game of chess with Mary, checkmated her, and then she beat me at two games of Backgammon.

[23] **10th.** At home preparing sermon. Sent Ching Ung to tell Tong Mi to preach at Chapel tomorrow. Also wrote to Mr. Block to ask if Dr. Jones had left Fuh Chau, to which he replied he left some days ago in the "Cadiz". Just at night went with Mary to call on Miss Smith. Evening at home. Chess + Backgammon after prayers. Sent \$5. to Wolfe, he returned \$2, he owed me.

11th. Did not go to my Chapel today. At 1/2 past 11 o'clock started on foot for Nantai. Stopped on the way at Ching Sing Tong till the services were over and then went home with Baldwin to dinner. At 4 P.M. preached in the American Church to a good Congregation. "For we are saved by Hope". Had a good time, thank God. Walked to the head of long bridge with C.C. Baldwin + then called a chair as far as the South Gate. Evening reading home papers.

12th. Today at home reading and studying. Song Mi called to give me the estimates of the Mud Mason for repairs at the Chapel. A vagabond sailor called + inquired for Mr. Wolfe. He is the same man who went to Gibson a few days ago and Gibson gave him \$5. + Baldwin \$5. = \$10. I think he is a great swindler. Went for a walk with Wolfe. He took tea with us + spent the evening.

[24] **13th.** Today at home in my study. Letters and packages came in from Amoy and Nantai. Mrs. Bloville invites us to go to her home if we go to Amoy. Binkley wrote explaining the sense of his letter to me on the subject of Dr. Jones. Baldwin wrote on the subject of going to Amoy or some place [other] than Amoy if that doesn't suit. Mentions Canton. I answered his and Binkley's letters. Mr. Wolfe got a note from Mrs. Smith stating him [Mr Smith] to be if anything worse and express little hope of his recovery. Mary rode out on the hill this evening. The Hartwells + Mrs Wooden called just at night. Evening Chess + Backgammon.

14th. Today in my study in the forenoon. Afternoon prayer meeting in my parlor – I led the meeting. Mr. Wolfe in praying for poor Mr. Smith broke down with excess of feeling.

15th. Today took Eddie and went over to Nantai. Left Eddie at Mr. Baldwins and Bro B. + myself went down town and I bought some clothes. A coat for \$12. and a vest for \$4. Went to Hedges and got some flannel for the children some socks. Called on all the members of our Mission not absent from home, and then went over and called at Panasong on all at home. Got some books of Doolittle in the Court Dialect.

16th to 25th of November. The most I will mention now is the death of Rev. Geo. Smith at Amoy, the return of his widow to Fuh Chau, her near confinement – the sickness of Mr. Wolfe of the same mission. I was with him and caring for him during the whole time. His disease was the diarrhea of a violent character. He is now doing well and goes out. The 18th just came with my family to the "South Side" and stopped with the young ladies preparatory to leaving for Canton and to make a final visit with the Binkleys who leave in the "Helen Nicholson" very soon for America.

Last evening the 24th of Nov. at the house of the young ladies baptised the Infant Child of Bro. Maclay. His name is Edgar Stanton. After this ceremony the Mission assembled at Bro. Binkleys and Bro. Maclay + Gibson administered the Ordinance of the Lord's Supper. Mrs. Martin stayed over night with Mrs. Binkley. Have engaged passage to Hong Kong on the P + O Steamer "Formosa" which leaves at daylight tomorrow morning.

[26] This afternoon went down to the Anchorage calling on the way at the Picture gallery and got our faces taken in a group. The Baldwins went down with us to the steamer + Miss Benlak [?] also. Arrived on board about six in the evening. Had very good accomodations given to us, and were pleased with the Chief Officer Mr. Brooks. The Capt by name Brown came aboard after us. Slept quietly during the night.

25th. This morning about 9 o'clock the ship started down the river. Got out to sea about 11 o'clock and got sea sick soon after and we all took to our beds. No incident of importance by the way today only uncomfortable stomachs.

26th. This morning found ourselves at Amoy. After breakfast Revds Rapleyea [?], Blovelt + Kipp came on board and after a short interview went ashore with them in their boat. Went to Mr. Blovelt's and took dinner there. Had a pleasant call. They all seem to be in good spirits at Amoy.

At about 4 P.M. left Amoy and came out to sea. The night was rough and sea-sickness was not far off.

[27] **27th.** This morning early a[t] Swatow. During forenoon went ashore in Captain's gig, called on Mr. Gregory in the Consulate and spent an hour or such a matter with him. Steamer left about 3 P.M. Stayed on deck as long as I could, very rough. Sick went below vomited and lay down. Took no supper.

28th. This morning at Hong Kong about 7 o'clock, took breakfast on steamer. Through mistake in the hour of the River Steamer Kinshan leaving for Canton it left before I was aware of it so we were left at H.K. I went ashore and found my way to Dr. Legge's and obtained accomodations there for my family and then came back for them. In evening took a long walk + ride with Mary, the children + Mrs. Legge.

29th. Sunday. Went to church today and heard the Dr. preach and also in the evening. After evening service several came in and took tea. Among others the Rev. Mr. Preray [?] from Canton.

30th. Today still at H.K. Should have gone up to Canton but waited for the company of Rev. Mr. Smith + wife who go up tomorrow. Forenoon went out with Mary shopping. Then went to Russell + Co's and got fifty dollars in Bank Bills. Came back and finished a letter for America. Then went in [28] company with Dr. + Mrs. Legge and called first at a Mr. Sharps, then at a Mr. Harpers then on Rev. Mr. + Mrs. Smith at the Foundling Asylum. It was sometime after dark before we got back. Did not take tea till late.

Dec 1st. Took an early breakfast and left at 1/2 past 8 o'clock for the steamer. Dr. L came down to the wharf and saw us off. The Smiths had come on before us. The Boat left at 9 A.M. The ride up the river was very fine. I was interested with the Bonge Forts which were knocked to pieces so energetically by the English during the last war at this place. Arrived in Canton about 4 P.M. and at Mr. Bonney's at about 5 P.M. and met with a hearty reception. Thanks to God for all these journeying mercies.

2nd. Today in forenoon remained in my room writing and towards [word missing?] received calls. 1st from Mrs Lawrence 2nd Mr. Morrison her brother 3rd Mr. Vrooman. Afternoon towards night went with Mr Bonney on the river, he to make some business calls I for the pleasure. Came back part of the way on foot through the [29] Chinese streets. Evening at Mr. Bonneys looking over picture + card books +c.

3rd. Today at home (temporary home) studying and receiving calls and looking after children. In forenoon called a short time at Rev. Mr. Parks of the Methodist Mission. Mrs. P- has an infant and is herself not strong. Was lying on the sofa. He has been in China just as long as I have. This afternoon Mrs + Mr. Hutton called. He has been here nine years. She six years and has five children Mr. + Mrs Condit afterwards called. They have been here three years and have one child just the age of our youngest. Mrs. Condit is a native of Danville Vermont. Moved to Ohio when she was 14 years of age. Just at night went out on the river as last night. Went to a prayer meeting at the house of Dr. Kero. Meeting led by Mr. Charles Preston of the Presbyterian Board.

[Vol 2 Part 2: Dec 4th, 1863 – Dec 31st, 1863]

4th. Today studied Chinese; read more than a chapter in Hebrews. Dull headache most of the day induced by a cold I suppose. Towards night went with Mr. Bonney on the street first, then across the river to the Consuls and in to Russel and Co's. then back through the streets across the river home after dark.

[30] **5th.** Today in house studing till afternoon went through the street for some ways, stopped into an apothicary's shop and bought some Rhubarb. Took a boat and went across the river and got some letters 3 from America forwarded from Fuhchau by Bro. S.L. Baldwin. From the letters I learn that Mother Harriet is married to a man by the name of of Sayles of Starksboro.

6th. Sunday. Attended early chapel in morning. Went to Rev. J. Preston's and saw his + Mr. Huttons child both tired [?]. Evening went to service. Parks preached.

7th. This forenoon went with Mr. Bonney to his chapel in the city of Canton 1 1/2 miles away more particularly to see his school of boys and hear them recite and sing. Was much pleased with their appearance and their evident progress in their studies. They have made good advancement in singing. Some times they sang very excellently.

On the way back called at the temple of the Five Genii which covers a wide space but contains nothing very marked for beauty. A large bell hung over the Entrance with a piece broken from one edge by a cannon ball during the last war here between the Chinese + English. Saw the images of the five men who settled Canton and the five [31] rams in front they found here when they first arrived running wild and which they tamed and kept till their deaths when they turned into stones and are kept as a memorial. Hence the name sometimes given to Canton "The City of Rams". In a separate Enclosure saw where several hundred years ago the god [blank space] stepped on a rock and left the print of his foot. It is an indention in a large rock marking the outlines of a huge foot and Chinese superstition has engendered the fable. In a separate part of the temple were over a hundred women employed in making tents for soldiers, at the rate of from 25 to 40 cash a day. Got home at 1 o'clock P.M. Soon Rev. Charles Preston called and I went with him to his chapel on a fine street. It was well filled with attentive listeners and he preached an hour and a half. His chapel is a very good structure, deep but narrow. Cost at the outset \$1400 and he pays an annual rent of \$80 for the ground.

Called into two Chinese Photograph Saloons. Afterwards came home. [32] This evening the Monthly Concert was held at which I led and used up most of the time in giving a description of the work in Fuhchau.

C.R. Martin Diary, Volume 2 Part 2 Page 1

8th. This morning about six o'clock started in a boat with Mr Preston (Charles) for a large village 12 miles distant called H'uk Sang. (Budhist Mountain) though there is not a hill to be seen for miles around. Arrived there around 10 o'clock A.M. I was pleased with the substantial Brick houses and the neatness of the streets and shops and evident thrift. Passing along the street called into the Wesleyan Chapel there – a neatly painted [?] up building for publicly preaching the word. Our place of destination was the Hospital of Dr. Kerr of the Presbyterian Mission. On arriving we found quite a company of men women + children waiting for medicine. Mr. Preston improved the opportunity to speak of the truths of religion. I went out with a guide to look at the town. He led me through the principal streets. Saw nothing nothing [sic] novel save pigmy [?] Handkerchiefs in several shops. Bought an umbrella [33] made in foreign style for which I paid \$1,25 cents too much as I afterwards learned. Came back to the hospital and found Preston yet preaching to the crowd. Went in and saw the native student doctor examine the different patients and saw them give out the medicines. 160 patients past in rapid review and received attention of some kind. Some were blind or had diseases of the eyes. Some were lame from swelling, some had sores of various kinds, one boy had a tooth pulled. This kind of work has greatly conciliated the people there so I was told. Sometime ago the place was almost inaccessible by the missionary. The feeling against foreigners is wearing away and good is expected to result soon from the efforts put forth.

On the way back called at a literary pagoda and ascended to the top which gave a fine view of the surrounding country for miles. Got home at 1/2 past 5 P.M.

This evening the Bannings gone to a dinner at the French Consuls on the occasion of laying the corner stone of the Roman Catholic Cathedral at Canton the [34] ceremony of which occurred today with great pomp which the Bannings also attended. This evening the Rev Mr. Roberts formerly of the Southern Baptist Board but now acting by himself was with us. He is an old man. He has been in China 26 years, been home during this time on two occasions. The interview with him was very pleasant. He is very careless in his manners, slovenly in his habits. His collar was ripped a quarter way round from the front on one side and furnished a fine argument against single men as missionaries. I learn he has a wife and two children in America. She and he could not get along well in China so she went home.

9th. Today forenoon writing. About noon went with Mary to call on some of the families. Called at Mr. Huttons, of Prestons, Chalmers and Turners and enjoyed the calls very much. Came back at 1/2 past 3 P.M. After dinner Mr Parks came in and stayed some time. He is a pleasant man. Was born in the West Indies. His father [35] was a Missionary there.

Went to England when he was 7 years old and received a good education I should judge.

10th. The principal thing was took family and went to the artists for their pictures. Did not succeed very well accepted of only the nurse's and Lucius.

This evening led the weekly prayer meeting at Dr. Kerr's. Box from "Surprise."

11th. This morning arose earlier than usual and hastily prepared for a trip into the country. All of us went to the "White blond Hills" distant some six miles by land. The Bonney's were with us and the following persons joined us at the "Little North Gate" Mr. + Mrs. Condit + Messrs Thompson and Guleck late from Japan. The mountains lie in a northerly and easterly direction from Canton. For about four miles the road is mostly level and at intervals are small and poorly built houses and hamlets. Over the door of many of these houses observed the characters for "Three happinesses come down to the door" (Ngo hok ling moun). Arrived at the Budhist [36] Monastery, which is within 1/4 mile of the top about 11. A.M. Here the ladies stopped and prepared refreshment while the gentlemen and Mrs. Condit went on to the top. Only Mr. Bonney, Mr. Thompson and myself reached the highest point. The view in all directions was very good. South lay the city of Canton, south-east was Nhampoa [?], north-east + west were numberless villages and immense paddy fields. In a southerly direction and looking in a straight line could see seven streams of water making long lines of white and cutting up the land into islands and peninsulas. Got back to the Monastery about 1/2 past 1 o'clock and soon sat down to a table spread with choice viands. This done, as soon as the tables were cleaned and things packed for home, sung a hymn. I prayed and then we were on the move back down the hill by a different and steeper and further route. Arrived home tired about dark after a day spent very pleasantly and I trust profitable. Capt. Bennett of the Hankaw [?] called [37] and took tea + spent the evening.

12th. Today in forenoon went to the artists to get the pictures taken the other day. He had spoiled the one taken which we accepted and of course couldn't do. About noon went up to Mr. John Preston's and spent the afternoon pleasantly. Before coming back went out on the "Sha Mun" as they call it (sand face), an island built mostly by foreigners for the building residences out of the indemnity money from Chinese.

Got home at dark.

13th. Today Sunday. Went in forenoon with Mr. Bonney to his chapel and was much interested in the exercise [?] with his scholars and the public preaching of the word. In singing I gave them a specimen of

Foochow music and in preaching I also spoke a few words in the Foochow dialect. Came back about 2 P.M.

This evening preached to the missionaries at East End at Rev Mr. Smith's parlor. Had a very good time. The congregation seemed interested.

[38] **14th.** Today in forenoon called with Mr Bonney at the following places. Rev. Mr. Balls. He is an old man upwards of 60 years old. Came out in 1838. Has been to America once. Mrs. Ball is a Scotch woman. They have one son a young man. Rev. Mr. Graves, Southern Baptist. Rev. Mr. Roberts, Southern Baptist, noted for having been with the rebels at Nanking. He was not at home, left cards. Called with Mary at Dr Kerr's, Rev. Preston's, Rev. Mr. Folsom's [?], Rev. Mr. Smith's, Rev. Mr. Piercy. I called down at Mr. Schilling's, Southern Baptist.

Mail came in today. Letters from Fuhchau from Miss Salli and Mrs Buckley [?].

15th. ~~Today in forenoon went up to Russell and Co's and drew One Hundred Dollars on my bill of credit. [Transcribers note: the preceeding sentence was crossed out in the diary, but still legible.]~~ Dr. Hopper called with Mr. C. Preston. Afternoon went home with Dr. Hopper and took tiffin¹ with him and his three little girls. His wife has gone to Shanghai with two of her children. Went from Dr. Hopper's to Mr. Condit's. From here to Mr. Nevins of the "Union Presbyterian Society." He has been in Canton three years, has a wife and two children. From here [39] went to Mr. Vrooman's. Mrs. Vrooman not at home. Stayed there sometime. He took me over his premises and showed me what he had and what he is doing. The principal thing is making type for his Phonography System. Took dinner with him and then came down home, he accompanying me on his way to Mr. Graves where his wife was spending the evening.

16th. This forenoon and not yesterday drew One Hundred Dollars from Russell + Co. Spent the afternoon at Mr. C. Preston's with family.

17th. Forenoon went with Mary to Dr. Kerr to see about her teeth. Afternoon went up and made a visit at Mr. Turner's [?] and dined. Got home after dark.

I went to prayer meeting at Dr. Kerr's led by Mr. Piercy.

18th. Today went to Rev. Mr. Hartton's [?] and had a pleasant time visiting. Went with him to his chapel in the suburbs, a large structure. Chinese built. Cost \$2800. Meeting's public preaching five evenings [40] in the week. The Wesleyan Mission have 28 communicants all told of Chinese converts in Canton.

¹ *Transcriber's Note: British (Anglo-Indian) for lunch.*

Called on my way up to Mr. Hartton's [?] at the Chinese Customs Office on T. Suson [?], Esq, acting commissioner, formerly in Fuh Chau. Saw also Mr. Lord formerly of the customs in Fuhchau. A pleasant call.

19th. Today, with Mr. Bonney for a guide, Mary and I went out shopping, first in the city then over the river to Honan. Filled out nearly all the orders from Fuh Chau.

This evening called on Mr. Piercy, superintendent of the Wesleyan Mission and he gave me an insight into the plan of working the mission +c.

20th. Sunday. This forenoon went to the Wesleyan Chapel. Rev. Mr. Parks had his infant child baptised. the Clergyman officiating was Rev. Mr. Smith. After this interesting service stayed to Chinese preaching by the same man. This afternoon went and heard Mrs. Bonney's scholars recite their scripture lessons. She has [41] 19 or 20 girls varying in ages from 10 to 20 years.

This evening accompanied by Mr. + Mrs. Bonney went up to Mr. Turner's to meeting. I preached and administered the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper. Dr. Hopper who lives at this port did not come and I learn never comes, does not believe in union meetings. He is an old school Presbyterian. Mr. Nevins of the United Presbyterians never comes, because other hymns than the Psalms of David are sung. Got home at 1/2 past 9 o'clock.

21st. Today with family and the Bonney's visited Pwantuikna's [?] garden some three miles up the river. It [is] a large enclosure surrounded by a high wall with a projecting roof inside under which the whole distance round is a paved walk. Walks also are in every direction. There are a number of summer houses, one pagoda which we ascended, also an apartment for theatrical plays near to a large well-windowed gallery where spectators may sit and observe all. In this gallery we ate our dinner of Tiffin. Was much edified with all and with the remains of an old Pekin Cart. Got home about 1/2 past [42] 4 o'clock P.M., stopping on the way and getting letters, one for me from Baldwin.

This evening Mr. + Mrs. Vrooman came in and spent the evening. Went into Dr. Kerr's and got medicine for Eddie who has been ailing from diarrhea somewhat for a few days past.

22nd. Today went to the Photograpy Saloon and had Eddie's likeness taken. Mary's + mine also. Did not succeed with Lucius. Came home and then went over and dined at Rev. S.J. Smith's; Rev. J. Preston's people were there and Rev. Mr. Piercy also. Eddie not at all well. A good deal of fever and continued diarrhea. The doctor don't [sic] seem to know how to manage his case or he is too careful or we are to [sic] careless with Eddie. Wrote a letter of three sheets to Bro. Baldwin.

23rd. To [sic] went with the nurse + Lucius to the Portrait Painter and succeeded better than yesterday in getting a portrait of Lucius, though not good. Came back and spent the rest of the day at Dr. Kerr's.

[43] **24th.** This morning at seven o'clock went with Mr. Bonney to see some parts of the city. First went to his Day School House. There got chairs + proceeded to the north port of the city to the what is called Five Storied [?] Pagoda though I should call it "Watch Tower". It is built on the wall five stories high of massive timbers from Siam. A few soldiers are quartered here. During the occupation of the city by the French + English, the soldiers of those nations were quartered here in port. From this lofty building several hundred years old we could see most of the city of Canton. We passed on our way to this tower the military parade ground and saw the English officers training about 600 Chinese soldiers. The exercise was stepping in time and all together. Each officer had fifty or sixty men drilling. From the tower we went to the old city Frensbury [?] now occupied by the French consul. Saw on one of the large posts of the building the indentation of a cannon ball thrown during the war, which almost moved the post off the stone on which it rested. A good many Tartar soldiers were here [44] who are being drilled by the French officers. Also went to the "Temple of Horrors", a Buddhist Temple + great resort of gamblers and lottery characters and Beggars. At this temple are represented the 16 kinds of punishment the bad endure in the nether world, among others were some being beheaded, some turning into animals and some being boiled in oil.

On the way back stopped at a shop + bought 2 Baskets and also some plaything for the children. Tonight a severe headache.

25th. Merry Christmas. The Bonneys with the children of boys + girls school all went down the Macao passage for a sail and picnic at a place called *tai shek*. In forenoon Mary and I went to Dr Kerr's to have her teeth pulled. Two were extracted. Afterwards I went out on the street and bought a few presents. A set of vases for Mrs. Bonney. A cup and saucers for Emma and for Mr. Bonney a glass to hold papers in the wind from blowing away. Coming home called at the Artist's and got the Photographic Paintings of myself + family. Paid \$7 for 16 paintings. Bonneys came home after dark.

[45] **26th.** Before breakfast went with Mr. Bonney on a ramble about the city. First went to the Examination hall then to the East Gate then to the Temple of Confucius near the east gate. The building was undergoing repairs so did not appear nice + cleanly. There was no Image of the Sage but a large tablet. On either side were smaller tablets to the memory of other sages while on either side of the court in front in long separate buildings were arranged tablets to the memory of the 72

disciples. In a separate apartment is a school. From here went to Mr. B's Day School. From here went to the Mohamedan Mosque, an open building containing nothing but a tablet to the Emperor and a green sort of stand or desk where the patriarch discoursed. A book written in Arabic was lying in the desk and a long rod of muster [?] wood stood in front. From here went to visit the ground where a Roman Catholic Cathedral is in process of erection. It is in the form of a cross. At each corner in front are to be two stones of from Jerusalem + one from Rome. The name of Jerusalem is cut in the corner stone and Rome in the other. The grounds were formerly the house of the Governor General. The French would not give them up. Got home nearly ten o'clock. Afternoon visited at Vrooman's.

[46] **27th.** Went in forenoon to English consular church. Rev. Mr Grey read the service + Rev. Mr Stringer, missionary at Hong Kong, read a sermon. Mr. Wolfe was present. A goodly number was present. This evening attended meeting at Mr. Smith's. Mr. Piercy officiated. His remarks were appropriate to the occasion of his leave this week for home.

28th. Spent most of the day in Shopping. Visited 2 very nice crockery stores besides curio and silk stores in city suburbs + Honan. Did not buy [sic] much. The Bonneys + Mary along too.

29th. Today went out shopping on Mr. Gibson's account, bought a few articles of curiosity. Also went to Russell and Co.s and drew \$75. Came home in a boat. A good many came in and bade me goodbye. Packed up our things. Wrote a few letters for America + and [sic] went to bed for the last time in Canton. Paid Bonney \$52.50 for board family + servants for 1 month.

30th. This morning arose before daylight + prepared to leave. Got all ready. Ate a little breakfast, bade Mrs. Bonney [47] good bye, sent trunks +c by boat while we took chairs and went to the Ferry and arrived on board the "Spark" fifteen minutes before the time of starting. Trunks came a few minutes after. Mr. Bonney bade us good bye and left and we were soon off. Passing by the Bonneys + Smiths we were saluted by handkerchiefs from the verandahs +c. The day was delightful and I enjoyed the sail very much. Found the capt. very kind + pleasant. His name is Braday. He came out on the "Jacob Bell" with the Binkleys. The first + second officers were very kind. The first a Portuguese, the second an American, by name Bristol. Arrived in Macao about five o'clock P.M. Mr. Jones American Consul came on board after us. Took bag + baggage and left the boat and after a few minutes arrived at his residence, was introduced to his lady + children and received a warm welcome under the roof of this Christian family. Was formerly a professor

there in the Female Seminary. His health failing, attained this appointment. He is a staunch Methodist, conscientious and temperate. Is a young man scarcely past thirty. Has three brothers in the army, one a surgeon the others commissioned officers one colonel of a colored regiment. Mrs. Jones is a fine woman, intelligent though not brilliant, good and has two fine children, a little girl Lily and boy Willie respectively 4 + 3 years old. The house is large and well built formerly occupied by Mr. S.W. Williams. He Mr. Jones pays rent about \$400 a year.

31st. Today mostly in doors visiting and reading. Towards night Mr. + Mrs. Jones accompanied us on a walk + ride to some extent around the Island. First went down to the Praya, past the Governor's residence, past the Hotel, then on around the three hills as they are called, stopping at a small flower garden, past the Protestant Cemetery, in sight of forts, convents + Churches. A wide walk extends quite around the Island though in some places the grass has grown over it showing that it is seldom trodden throughout the whole extent. Coming back stopped at the green to hear the Brass Band but they soon were through. Leaving the ladies to go on Bro. Jones + myself went to the dispensary to get some medicine for his child's cold. Dr. not in and consequently were unsuccessful. Came home and passed the evening in pleasant conversation. Mary taken with bleeding from her gums. Not successful in stopping the blood. Thus closes another year. How good has God been to me + my family. May his name be praised. As he forgives my sins + failings so may I in return resolve to him in future more + more to his great glory [sic].

[Vol 2 Part 3: Jan 1st, 1864 – Jan 31st, 1864]

[50]

January 1st

1864¹

A Happy "New Year" in Macao. As Mrs Jones was receiving visits + as Mr. Jones was making visits Mary and I kept mostly to our rooms during the day.

In the Evening I went with Mr. + Mrs. Jones to a Cherede party at Mrs. Haskell's and was there introduced to ladies Mrs. Haskell, Mrs. Cunningham, Mrs. Vandenhoven, Mrs. Fisher, Miss King and among others the following gentlemen. Mr. Nye American, Mr. Fisher American, and clerk in Mr. Tho's Hunt's + Co's office. Mr. Capt Haskell Englishman, Mr. Vandenhoven Netherland Consul.

[51] **2nd.** This forenoon went with Mr. Jones to visit the Monte [Monti?] Fort. On our way passed the Senate House which was built in the year 1634 or 34 years after the Pilgrim fathers land[ed] in America. The structure is not beautiful but substantial. Over the door is the coat of arms of Portugal and an inscription in Portuguese. Passed by the Foundling Asylum, a large white building. There [are] a few foundlings there. High up on the gable is a raised picture of Mercy chiseled out in stone slab. The fort is on a high bluff or hill bearing north north east from the Senate. It is built in the form of forts two hundred years ago. Over the entrance, which is guarded by soldiers, is the Portuguese coat of arms and an inscription bearing the date 1626. This fort contains old fashion guns bearing the above date. They were cast in Macao, a thing which could not now be done, I am told. The fort commands the inner harbor and on the north + north east of the Island. From this fort you get the best view of the city of Macao. Near by is the St. Paul's Cathedral now in ruins, having years ago been burnt. It was A Jesuit Church. From here had a view of an old nunnery, now going to decay occupied by only three or four old nuns.

Afternoon made a visit to Bishops Bay, a beautiful place with its surroundings. [52] Nearby is the College of San Jose with its chime of bells where some 60 or 70 boys + young men are being schooled. Some of the boys were down on the beach playing in their long black robes. A few Chinese boys are receiving instruction but most of them are Portuguese. The

¹ *Transcriber's Note: Rev. Martin's wife, Mary, begins her diary on this date. It is interesting to compare his and her entries for the same dates.*

place received its name from the former residence there of a Bishop. Near by is also a summer house, a fine retreat in hot weather shaded on all sides and open to fine afternoon breeze. Ascending a hill we could see the tower nearly as well as from "Monte Fort". The Steamer Fiesun was coming into the harbor (outer). On our way home passed some of the houses occupied by the Missionaries of Canton during the war when they fled for their lives. Arriving home, Mr. Spedin, former Naval Store Keeper for our government soon came in. He has had transferred to Macao the Naval Depot and Mr. Jones supersedes or takes his place for the present till he comes back. He is preparing to go to America overland. Thinks of visiting Mrs. Jones' sister in India, Mrs. Hangh [?]. He is a Christian and has always befriended Missions + Missionaries and their prayers will follow him on his way to his beloved country + beloved wife.

[53] **3d.** Sunday. A Grand Te Deum at the Cathedral in honor of the birth of the Prince, heir presumptive of the Throne of Portugal, who was born the 2nd day of Nov. 1863.² After this a national salute from several Forts. And in the evening Grand illumination of the Praya.

4th. This forenoon Mr. Jones took Mary + myself to visit the celebrated cave of Camoëns, a Portuguese poet who was for some offense banished [from] his country who made his way to this far off land and loved the retreat of this cave, where he wrote his celebrated poem "Lusiad" in which he narrates the early exploits of his countrymen and takes off their vices. He is the Milton of Portugal, their Homer³. The cave is in a garden enclosed by a wall, containing several acres. This garden is filled with tall tropical trees and at places contains pots of flowers. There are fine walks chained [?] which lead to the places + objects of interest. Of these places I will record but three. A natural bridge of rocks, an observatory of a French Philosopher who died in 1827, and the cave of Camoëns. This is an opening through a monstrous rock say ten feet in extent bearing north + south or a little northwest by southeast. Here the poet loved to sit protected from the rain and sun and compose sentences in rhyme. The following is from "Perry's Expedition to Japan".

[54] "The cave of Camoëns, where the Portuguese poet is supposed to have written a portion of his Lisiad, is a place of universal and resort at Macao. It is picturesquely situated upon the summit of a small hill on the Margin of the inner harbor. Large granite stones are here gathered in a confused cluster which form a natural cave from the entrance of which there is a wide prospect of the surrounding country. The banians, the pagoda and and [sic]

² *Transcriber's Note: Probably Carlos I, the last but one King of Portugal, who ruled from 1889-1908 (born 1863, assassinated 1908).*

³ *Transcriber's Note: Luiz Camoëns, 1524-1580, Portuguese poet.*

other oriental trees unite their foliage and form a grove in which a rocky cave is embowered. Surrounding it are grounds cultivated with trees, creeping vines and flowering shrubs, charmingly arranged by the borders of winding paths and upon the sides of the hills. Artificial terraces ingeniously disposed invite the visitor to the enjoyment of the view, or to rest beneath the shade. Above the cave rises a rotunda from which there is an enchanting prospect; A marble monument with a bronze bust (plastic bronzed) and an inscription here record the features, the genius + virtue of Camoëns the poet.

Camoëns' visit to Macao was during his banishment from Portugal, in consequence of his pertinacious courtship of a lady of rank whose parents did not affect an alliance with the poet who, although of a respectable family, [55] was poor, and looked upon as an uncertain adventurer. In 1551 he proceeded to Goa in India, where he again involved himself in trouble by writing his "Absurdities of India" and was banished to the Moluccas and in the course of his exile he resorted frequently to Macao which was a favorite residence of the poet. The cave was his chosen spot of retirement where in its "sweet retired solitude" he meditated his great work the *Lusiad*. Camoëns returned to Portugal but only to live in misery and die in an hospital." ⁴

Perry estimates the whole population at 20,000 – 13,000 of which belong to the peninsula + town whereof 1/2 are Chinese the other half Portuguese. On our way to this cave passed the Church of St. Antonio. While still gazing at the cave a royal salute from the forts was given, the hour being 12 o'clock M. We hastened home and thus allowed Mr. Jones to do some writing connected with the Naval Depot.

In the evening Mr. + Mrs. Jones went to the Governor Amaral's to dinner. I walked to Bishops Bay with Mr. Speden and viewed the grand illumination from this point. A beautiful scene on the Praya, and three or four Lorchas in the Bay were beautifully illuminated.

[56] **5th.** Today in forenoon writing. Afternoon went to walk and see the Chinese Temple on the Peninsula. The main body of the temple very much like all others. The thing of attraction was the winding path of stone steps up the hill back to several smaller shrines built in recesses of granite Bolders [sic]. Immense banyans cover the side of the hill and the view westward down on the inner harbor is splended. Came back to the Praya and went the whole length + back again home. This evening am host + hostess gone to the young Baron's to help celebrate his appointment to that title.

⁴ *Transcriber's Note: Mary quotes this passage also, same date.*

6th. This morning packed up our trunks + boxes and settled up our accounts at Macao and bidding our kind friends goodbye about 11 o'clock left for the Steamer "Fiesun" bound to Hong-Kong. It left the outer Harbor at just 12 o'clock at noon. Mr. Jones came with us to the Boat. As we left, the guns at the different forts opened a national salute. It reminded me of Sweet America on some of its festive days.

[57] After steaming some four hours arrived in Hong Kong harbor. The steamers King Sung and White Cloud passed us in the distance about half the way. Arriving at H.K. I first went alone to the P.+ O. Officer and inquired when the Formosa, then at anchor in the harbor, would be dispatched, and was told on Friday the 8th Inst. I then came back to the steamer and got my family and part of my goods in one boat and part in another boat which I sent to the Formosa immediately to save trouble and expense. At the Bund, calling two chairs and six coolies to carry my things went over to the German Mission where we took up our quarters for the night. Found the people living in a very simple style. The house was the Foundling Asylum. Mr. Landenhoff being the manager assisted by his wife and two maiden ladies whose names and ages I did not learn.

Rev. Mr. Preston had written to Landenhoff that we were coming to stop with them until a chance opened to take steamer for Fuhchau. Had a good nights rest.

7th. After breakfast and doing some writing, went first to Dr. Legges' and made a call for a few minutes. Then went [58] to Russell and Co's and drew fifty dollars, then received letters + packages which had been sent from Canton. Then went shopping. Then came around in order to call on Mr. Wolfe when I met him on the street. Went with him to the Bishop Smith's, sent in my card but he was not in. Waited in the yard for Wolfe a few minutes then went with him to Russell and Co's and drew fifty dollars and gave to him, taking his order on Tho. K. Ashton Foo-Chow, his agent there.

I bid him good day and went and called on Mrs. Congar [?]. Saw Ella and from there back to the German Mission. Mrs. Legge called on Mrs. Martin. Got things in readiness, ate dinner, called coolies, bade the friends goodbye, and left for the ship Formosa where we arrived on board a little after dark and passed the night quietly.

8th. This morning after dressing went ashore and proceeded to the Office of the P. + O. Comprador and change[d] a few [59] Bank Bills into dollars. Then came back and got a letter and proceeded to the White Cloud and sent it to Mr. Bonney.

At about half past 9 o'clock A.M. the ship got under way and we soon lost sight of the little English Colony. The rest of the day and night has but one history and that is Sea Sickness of a terrible tensity, little was the sleep we got. The sea was high and the ship's motion was No 1 disagreeable.

9th. But we arrived at Swatow at about 8 o'clock this morning and we lay at anchor a few hours and had time to get over the nauseating somewhat and when we got under way at about 4 P.M. I was able to take a little dinner but Mary declined. Went to bed early for fear of sickness again but the sea was smooth and had none, rested quite well.

10th. Sunday – Arrived at Amoy about 7 A.M. After breakfast I went ashore and called at Mr. Blauvelt's. Found them at [60] home and made arrangements with them to attend service at the chapel at 1/2 past 11 o'clock. Came back to the ship but Mary could not well go to church so when the Blauvelts came I went with them to the Island of Colonsoo and heard the Rev. Mr. Ripp of the Dutch Reform Mission preach an extempora sermon from "And he thanked God and took Courage". After service, came with the Blauvelts to the ship. Mrs. Martin went with us ashore and we took dinner with them and spent the time pleasantly and then towards night came back to our ship quarters. This evening got into conversation with the Capt on American affairs and had a long talk with. [sic] I flatter myself I gave him some useful information and effectually removed some objections in his mind about the vexed questions. At last got to talking about religious matters and wound up friends.

Just at night called over to see Mr. Schenck but he was out somewhere. He has been sick for some time.⁵

[61] **11th.** This forenoon Mr. Kipp and Blauvelt came on board. And soon after Mr. Schenck. After Schenck left, Mary, Eddie + I went with the two former gentlemen and visited the grave of the Rev. Geo. Smith in the Mission Cemetery on Ro long Soo. We walked some mile and a half or two miles going and coming. The Island⁶ is almost desolate and is used as a burial place for the dead more than for the abode of the living. Saw a few houses, many of them sadly mutilated showing the effects of a local war of rebellion several years ago. There is a new grave on the island and monument over it with the following inscription: "Here lies poor dog Chilly aged ____ who died ____." It was the loved dog of a tide waiter. Came back to the ship before it was two o'clock when Blauvelt + Kipp said good bye + left. Soon after Doug [?] and Rhapelyey [?] came on board and staid a few minutes. We did not get up anchor till nearly four o'clock P.M. The sea was quiet and so was the ship + we went on deck and enjoyed the scenery. The weather continued favorable all night and we went along at a good speed.

[62] **12th.** This morning on arising found we were in the neighborhood of the "White Dogs" and the captain said we would be at the Anchorage at 11 o'clock A.M. which proved to be the fact. Passed several vessels at the mouth of the river and one beating up the coast. Saw a steamer supposed to

⁵ *Transcriber's note: This last sentence was added in at the margin of the page.*

⁶ *Transcriber's note: Probably Colonsoo Island.*

belong to the customs cruising after Pirates. A passage boat carelessly crossed our bow and was pretty well riddled, tearing down both masts and ripping up the sails. One man came near being swamped but was pulled up in a wet condition. The boat-men were very angry and talked vilely as is their custom. Soon after casting anchor Weller's Boat came alongside + I had my baggage transferred to it + we all got in with young Henry Brown the Dispatch Boy and arrived at the landing at 1/2 past one o'clock and at Bro. Baldwin's a half hour later and were welcomed back to Fuh Chau with heartiness. During the afternoon all the friends came in to bid us well. Came + congratulate +c.

[63] **13th.** Attended to some small business matters in forenoon and in afternoon went to the city first to East Street where had preaching, had a long talk with Tong Mi then went to my house on the hill + found my servants well and house all right apparently.

14th. Today making out my accounts + doing other writing. Took dinner at Mr. Gibson's. Towards night Mr. Woodin called. Today the doctor declares Mr. Maclay's youngest child to have the "Small Pox". Some excitement on the occasion this. Mr. Black, U.S. Vice Consul took tea with us at Baldwins and spent the evening.

15th. This morning concluded to go into the city at once to avoid further exposure to small pox. I sent in our effects then came in before Mary and the children so as to go to my chapel by two o'clock, but did not reach there much before three o'clock. Baldwin came in afterwards with the children + Mary. Tong Mi preached a good discourse from the 15th Chapt. [64] of John. Not very many present. Came home with a hungry stomach having had no dinner. Found Mary busy with the children and arranging the house. Lucius' wet nurse left for good this morning so he is being weaned. A few Chinese brethren met in my parlors this evening and we had a season [session?] of prayer + thanksgiving for his mercies to me + mine during our absense. Surely I have reason to praise God. At such a time praise is comely. At such a time I will praise him. Praise the Lord O My Soul. When we left our home my dear wife was sadly affected and had been for nearly a year. But she has come home nearly if not quite well. Well may she join with me in recording the mercies of God to her. While in Canton our children were sick but in mercy were restored. Well may their young hearts join in the Song of Praise. During our absense the old year passed away. The new year was ushered in. We have returned renewed in strength of body and mind.

16th. In forenoon assisted in getting the house in living order, put up a bedstead. Dolittle came in and called for tea and something to eat as he had been to the military parade and not yet breakfasted. Afternoon went to my Chapel. [65] Li In Mi preached from the miracle of healing the leper. After this, Quarterly Conference. I being preacher in charge of course presided in the absense of Maclay. Baldwin was present, he + Mrs. Baldwin having come

in to spend the night with us. This evening examined a few candidates for baptism, the persons being from Ting Qong. Only two seemed to be prepared for the ordinance of baptismal according to rule.

17th. Sunday. In morning Love Feast at the usual hour at East Street. It was one of a good deal of interest. Bro. Gibson preached and administered the sacrament. I baptised five persons. A man, his wife and son, and two men from Ting Qong. The exercises were interesting. Some outsiders were noisy about the door and talking vile language. The inserted sheet will give the sequel and the important things of the next few days.

[Transcriber's note: On this page in the diary Rev. Martin has glued a large sheet of printed paper, evidently clipped from a newspaper. An identical clipping was enclosed with and referred to in Mary Martin's diary. What follows is the text of that clipping.]

FUHCHAU, January 22d, 1864.

On Sunday morning, January 17th, a "Quarterly Meeting" was held at the chapel of the American Methodist Episcopal Mission on the East street of the city of Fuhchau. All the native Christians connected with that Mission in the city and its suburbs, who could conveniently assemble, were present. In addition to these, there were some twelve or fifteen from distant places in the country. It is the custom of the native Christians connected with the churches of said Mission to provide for the entertainment of those who come from a distance; so that nearly all who assemble on these occasions remain after the service, to dine together in the rear part of the building, which is fitted up as a residence for the native preacher and his family; and those who come from a great distance remain over night.

On the Sunday referred to, the services were frequently interrupted by persons pounding on the outer door, using vile language, &c. Nothing was thought of this, however, as it had frequently happened before. As the disturbance became very annoying after a time, Rev. Mr. MARTIN went outside, and seized a man in the act of beating the door, intending to carry him to the rear of the chapel, and send him to the officers in due time for punishment. On the earnest intercession of the neighbors, however, he let him go with an admonition. The services then proceeded to their close in comparative quiet, and the missionaries who had been present retired, leaving the native Christians to dine together according to their custom.

About 3 P.M., messengers came to the house of Mr. MARTIN, reporting that the people were seizing the church members as they came out, and beating them. Rev. Messrs. GIBSON and MARTIN immediately went to the office of the District Magistrate, and secured six or eight constables to accompany them to the Chapel. On arriving there they found a mob of 30 or 40 persons rioting within, beating the

C.R. Martin Diary, Volume 2 Part 3 Page 7

Christians, breaking up furniture, &c. They arrested five persons who were identified as leading in the riotous proceedings. The Tepo, who arrived just then, took their names, and went security for one of them, who was released. The constables started with the others, but soon returned with only one, saying that the people had come upon them, and rescued three.

Messrs. GIBSON and MARTIN accompanied them to the Magistrate with their one prisoner, and were received with the greatest politeness, the officer professing great disgust at what had been done, and promising the arrest and punishment of the offenders. The prisoner in hand was immediately examined, and as he professed to have accidentally joined the crowd, and the fact that the people did not release him gave some probability to his story, he was only sentenced to light a candle before the chapel, hold it in his hand, kneel down, and confess his crime, according to the Chinese custom.

After this sentence was pronounced, Mr. GIBSON returned to his home on the south side of the river, while Mr. MARTIN and Mr. WOODIN, of the American Board Mission, went to see the sentence executed.— After they had been at the chapel some time, the constables came *without the prisoner*, but accompanied by two literary men, who said that the constables would perform the sentence for him, and they would stay to see it done, but it would not do for a literary man to be so disgraced as to do it in person! Messrs. M. and W. returned to the Magistrate, and remonstrated against such laxity in the administration of the law; but His Honor thought that as the culprit was a literary man, and it would be a great disgrace for him to perform the sentence in person, the complainants ought to yield a little, and consent to have it done by proxy!

Soon after dark, a mob of some 40 or 50 persons attacked the chapel, broke in the back door, and commenced to demolish everything they could find. Pulpit, chairs, benches, tables, beds, bedding, — everything went the same way. The spirit of destruction was rampant. The private room of the native preacher was broken open, and he was forced out of the building with a young child in his arms. His earnest plea to be allowed to take his wife and sister with him was unheeded. Hurried out by the mob, he fell, and his little boy was so stunned as to be senseless. The preacher himself, stunned and bewildered, walked on in the street, and finally reached a place of refuge, where he might leave his child, and return to see what he could do for his wife and sister. In the mean time, the mob abused the poor women in every conceivable way,— struck them with missiles of wood and iron, burnt the face and side of one of them, stripped them of their clothing, *and grossly violated them*, until a distant relative came and took them away to his house, and declared that they should there remain.

Simultaneously with these proceedings, and strangely enough, it seems that another mob had attacked the chapel of the English Church Mission on South street, and demolished everything they could find inside.— The Magistrate arrived on the ground in the midst of their proceedings, but— instead of showing him any respect— the mob set up a tremendous yell, and went on with their work more fiercely than ever! The officer passed on, and as far as is known, made no effort to suppress the mob.

Afterward, the two mobs seem to have joined their forces in East street, and then divided— part to destroy a chapel belonging to the American Board Mission, and the remainder making a rush for the residences of the missionaries' on Wu-shih-shan. They broke in the gate of Rev. Mr. MARTIN'S premises with an ax, burst into his parlor, destroying everything therein, served the dining room the same way, and were proceeding with their depredations in the guest room, when the District Magistrate, (not the one before mentioned, the house being in a different District from the chapel,) arrived on horseback, and, cutting right and left with his whip among the crowd, demanded the reason of the tumult. It is said that several arrests were made, but it does not appear that a single person was taken to prison. However, the mob was dispersed; and thus the houses of Rev. Mr. WOLFE and Mrs. SMITH were saved, as well as those of Rev. Messrs. HARTWELL and WOODIN in another part of the city, which they had declared their intention to destroy.

Mr. MARTIN escaped with his family, just as the mob were at his gate, by breaking a hole through a partition into the Taouist temple adjoining, where they were kindly received by the priests, and kept until the mob had retired. Mrs. SMITH, with her sister-in-law and children, took refuge temporarily in the house of a Chinese friend near by.

During the night, several messages were received by the British and American Consuls, who, on the first intimation of danger to foreign property, sent messengers in to the officers to require immediate protection.

On Monday, both Consuls visited the Prefect, to demand the prompt punishment of the rioters; and also went to review the buildings, in order to judge of the extent of the damage. The British Consul also secured an adequate guard for the protection of MRS. SMITH'S residence. Mr. MARTIN and family, having had all their plates, dishes, &c., destroyed, came over to the south side of the river, to remain for a time with the family of Rev. S. L. BALDWIN. A guard was also placed on their premises to prevent further destruction.

On Tuesday morning, the fact of the gross violation of the persons of the two women became *known* for the first time, (though it had been *suspected* previously,) and was immediately communicated to the two Consuls by Messrs. GIBSON and MARTIN of the American M.E.

Mission. As both English and American property had been destroyed, both English and American lives endangered, and converts of both missions persecuted and injured, the two Consuls thought it best to act in concert. It was agreed that two demands should be made that day of the District Magistrate: — 1st, That the Tepo of the ward in which the chapel is situated should be arrested, and kept in chains until he should reveal the names and residences of those arrested on Sunday, and rescued. 2d, That the Magistrate should come in person, and take the depositions of the women who were violated.

A.L. CLARKE, Esq., the U.S. Consul, accompanied by Rev. Messrs. GIBSON and MARTIN, then went to the Magistrate with these demands. After much Chinese prevarication and dodging, the demands were assented to, and constables sent to arrest the Tepo, who returned after a while *with another man!* The missionaries present knowing that he was not the Tepo, the Consul indignantly demanded that such play should cease, and the Tepo be brought in at once. Again the constables went out, and this time returned with the right man. On being questioned, he at first denied all knowledge of the affair, but afterward admitted that he was present when the names were taken, but said he did not take them, and did not know who the persons were! It was not until the torture was applied, that he reluctantly gave the names of the five persons, and their residences. It being arranged that the Magistrate should accompany the Consul at 1 P.M. the next day to take the depositions of the women, their present meeting was closed.

On Wednesday, the American Consul, with his staff, was at the District Magistrate's office at 1 P.M., according to appointment. After keeping them until 3, he accompanied them to the house where the women were staying, and on seeing their condition, and hearing their testimony, he expressed himself as very indignant that such outrages should be perpetrated in his District, and said the offenders should be instantly arrested, and the full penalty of the law executed upon them. To which Mr. CLARKE replied that he was very glad to hear him say so, and should be still more pleased when he knew that it was *done*.

The District Magistrate is allowed until Friday to have the men arrested; and it is understood that on Monday next, H.B.M.'s Consul, CHAS. SINCLAIR, Esq., and the U.S. Consul, A.L. Clarke, Esq., are to visit the Viceroy together, and demand of him the speediest possible treatment of the case, and an immediate investigation into the conduct of the District Magistrate, whose miserable inefficiency has been the occasion of numerous complaints from the British Consul, anterior to the present difficulty.

It should be said to the honor of the native Christians that as far as is known, not a single one has denied his faith, or been moved to desert it by these fiery temptations. The man who has suffered most, in person and family, is one of the mildest and most sweet-

dispositioned Chinamen we have ever known, and is widely known and respected, not only in Christian circles, but among his heathen countrymen. Though he says that he and his wife and sister would rather a thousand times have suffered death than this, yet they hold on to their faith in Christ, and believe that he will make all the mystery of his providence clear to them in the world to come. It will naturally be asked what was the cause of such a bold and unexampled riot? Nothing has been assigned to account for it, except that the people seeing the native Christian women enter the building, and knowing that foreigners were also there professed to believe that the women were used for lascivious purposes.— But that this is mere pretence is evident from the fact that the native helper and his wife had lived there for months, and were known as respectable and upright people. The mob was not led by strangers, but by people of the immediate neighborhood, who knew the groundlessness of such a charge.

It is doubtless in some way a development of the deep-rooted hostility to foreigners, and especially to the Christian religion, which is implanted in the hearts of these people, but whether it is the result of a deliberate plan, or of a sudden diabolical inspiration, is as yet unknown. Perhaps all will be made known in time.

The prompt action of the two Consuls is worthy of high praise; and it is to be hoped that they will succeed in speedily bringing the chief offenders to such immediate condign punishment as shall ever hereafter intimidate those who might have the spirit to follow in their steps.

S. L. BALDWIN,

of the American M.E. Mission

[66] **21st.** Thursday. 21st. Today Gibson and I went to the Kaing to get a man to go with us and open the Chapel at East Street which the Kaing had shut up and sealed. We were successful in this particular and took a look at the ruins inside the Chapel walls. Everything is destroyed, nothing remains unbroken. From here went to my house on the hill and got some things together.

22nd. Today at the Baldwin's writing for the mail.

23rd. Today also writing for the mail which closed at 2 P.M. Wrote to Milton friends and to Consul Jones at Macao.

24th. Attended Chinese service today at Treng Ang Tong then went to Ching Sing Tong and had the house opened for public preaching the word.

Attended our American Service at 4 P.M. Br. Baldwin preached an appropriate discourse from the words "they that have turned the world upside down have come here also."

25th. At the Baldwin's most of the day. Should have gone to the city but for the assertion by the [67] Chinese that handbills were posted up in different parts of the city exhorting the people to rise and kill every foreigner that comes into the city. The friends dissuaded me from going. Prayer meeting tonight at Bro. Baldwin's for the special purpose of commending to God the officers of Government endeavoring to obtain proper redress for the wrongs inflicted of late. That God would go with the two consuls + then south tomorrow to see the viceroy +c.

26th. Today Bro. Gibson has gone as interpreter to the American Consul to the viceroys in the city. Prayers at Bro. Baldwin's at 11 o'clock for them, this being the hour they with the English Consul meet the viceroy. Bro. Gibson returned before dark and reported favorably. The two kaing magistrates have had their buttons taken away till they shall have exerted themselves to the utmost to bring the offenders to to [sic] trial. The Viceroy promises to do all in his power to meet the just demands of the foreign consuls. Today three of the rioters were arrested at Ang tai küo. The prefect was told he need not repair our Chapel.

[68] **27th.** Today went to the city to get some things for Mary and look after things somewhat. Just before I was ready to come a coolie came in from Bro. Gibson advising me to come out at once as there might be trouble. He had heard of the closing of the shops on East and South Street and feared the presence of a foreigner might provoke to injury. I came out immediately and met with no harm. The viceroy issued a proclamation. 8 or 9 of the rioters on East Street were arrested and imprisoned. By order of the officials the shops were opened mostly. Some refused to the last on East Street. This closing of the shops is a significant disapproval of the doings of the officers. I hear the viceroy has said he shall wait to hear from Peking before he makes a final disposal of the arrested + imprisoned ones. This may be to appease the people for the present. If this matter receives the rebuke it should from the Chinese Authorities it can but be a help to our work by God's blessing.

Prayer meeting tonight at Baldwin's. Gibson led the meeting.

[69] **28th.** Today learn that the men arrested yesterday were were [sic] set at liberty last night unpunished and uncondemned. As the Prefect came home from the office of the Criminal Judge he found his doorway blocked by a mob who closed in about his Excellency and demanded the persons arrested at daylight should be freed. He soon yielded to their demands and soon they were all given up. This is a beautiful specimen of the efficiency of Chinese rulers.

Spent the day in reading and writing.

29th. At home reading, studying and writing.

30th. Mission Meeting today in forenoon. The mission voted to allow me to draw on the Treasurer of the Mission to the amount of \$500. for losses sustained in the riot.

31st. Preached in English today at 4 P.M. at the American Church.

[Vol 2 Part 4: Feb 1st, 1864 – Jun 21st, 1864]

[70] **Feb 1st.** Led the monthly concert at Tieng Ang Tong.

2nd. Today went to the city to my house then to Mr. Woodin's + Hartwell's. Good dinner at former place. Came to Ponasang and called on all the brethren there. This evening Mary + I went over to Gibson's and spent the evening. Mr. Blake U.S. Consul came in also. Came home about 10 o'clock.

7th. Today Sunday went + preached at Ching Sing Tong. There were present 20 persons. The class meeting was of some interest. The experience of the brethren + sisters on the main evidenced strong faith and much determination. This is the last day of the old year (Chinese). Tonight a watch meeting at Tieng Ang Tong. Coming home from Ching Sing Tong saw a beggar going from shop to shop with needles stuck into his scalp in various places. The blood was trickling down making his face horrid to behold. I noticed he got his money readily. At another place saw a beggar with his face besmirched with mud pleading in song for his allowance. I have sometimes seen a man with a pail of thick muddy water going from store to store dishing it over his face and nearly naked body thus attracting the attention of the shop keepers and calling for a fee of some cash.

[71] **8th.** Chinese New Years. The Chinaman's Sunday. Afternoon went with Maclay to Ching Sing Tong supposing it to be the day for Chinese Monthly Concert but found out on arriving then it is not till a week from today. Had one prayer with the brethren there + came home. Went out on the hill with Mary + Eddie.

9th. This forenoon went to the city. Sent C.C. Baldwin some vinegar looked after my things then some [?] came home read a chapter in Chinese colloquial. After noon towards night went out on hill with Eddie + Mary.

10th. To [day] went to Ching Sing Tong and had preaching to the inside [?] Chinese. The house was well filled and many listened with seeming interest. Ing Quang + Song Mi preached. It was nearly dark before I came home. Prayer meeting, which I led. The Sites' came down this afternoon and were present looking hole [whole?] as usual. All our Mission together tonight for the first time for several months, absence + sickness preventing.

[72] **11th.** Today in forenoon studying. After dinner Mary walked down to Ahok's with me to see something she thought she wanted, but when she saw it concluded it was either not the thing or that there was not enough of it for her purpose. Came back when I went with Bro. Sites to Ponasang, he to see Dr. Lyman and I to keep him company. Saw Mrs. Peet, Dr. Lyman, Rev. Mr. Baldwin and his new born daughter. On the way back Sites tried the price of tables.

12th. Today in the company of the Baldwins Mary I + the children went to the Anchorage in Jordin's House-Boat. Went to the store and house of Mr. Tho. Thompson's. Our object was to look for some crockery to replace what we lost in the late riot. Saw some which may do. Mary got into a ribbon box and anyone might know the result to me "A Ribbon Bill." Got home at 5 P.M., hungry + tired.

13th. Today in forenoon studying. Afternoon went down to Ahok's Store with Mary and bought some glass ware \$26 worth to replace what we lost in the riot. This evening Baldwin called me up into his study to discuss the oil, bedclothes and [73] Table Boy question. Before leaving I introduced the house question and came to a satisfactory conclusion on all.

14th. Preached this morning in Chinese for Gibson at Tien Ang Tong. Read some in the "Bards of the Bible." Attended the American Service. Bro. Baldwin preached on the subject of "Backsliding".

15th. This forenoon Bro. Sites came in and I went with him to Hedges where I bought some cutlery, a molasses jug and an umbrella. I should have first recorded that before breakfast I went into the city to get some needed articles. At about 12 o'clock Bro. Maclay called a Mission meeting. The object was to ask permission of the Mission to print a Dictionary somewhat after the model of Williams Jamie Dictionary, with the Foochow pronunciation. His request was granted. The Mission allowed me, on request, to occupy the Mission House No. 5 after the 1st of March. Called with Gibson on U.S. Consul.

16th. This day studied with teacher in forenoon. Afternoon went to Ching Sing Tong. Ing Quang preached to a rather slim congregation. Came home and found the mail in. Evening reading + writing.

[74] **17th.** Today have been reading and studying at home. Received a letter from Parson J. Y. Smith asking me to buy some of his furniture. Lo Tiong came in and I talked with him about employment for his son + himself.

This evening attended prayer meeting at Maclay's. Mr. Schenck I hear is to board with the Gibsons. Got a letter from Consul Jones of Macao. He has got the package of tea we sent him. The Jamestown has arrived there.

18th. Studying. Received a letter from Mr. Romney mostly about the riot in the city. He & family are well. He notices the death of Mrs. Schilling of the Southern Baptist Board. Mr. Schilling is going to America with his two little children.

Tonight Mr. Maclay preached at Tieng Ang Tong before the Native Helpers a Quarterly Sermon.

19th. This forenoon 1st took a lesson or two in Chinese then went down to the Heavenly Rest Church to attend the Examination of Native Helpers. My part of the Examination consisted of only one book of the Old Testament viz: the Book of Judges on which they were not all well prepared. [75] Afternoon looked over and criticised a written sermon by Hii Tong Mi. Afterwards went down to Hedges to look after a box which Mr. Thompson informed me by letter was sent there for me. I found it there and had it brought home. It was a box of crockery. This evening Tong Mi preached a sermon on liberality in giving. It was an excellent discourse said by Gibson to be the best he has ever heard in Chinese. His illustration[s] from scripture were apt + forcible, while the sincerity of his look and earnestness of his manner made you feel in sympathy with his theme. May it increase the Spirit of giving for Christ's Sake among the members of the Church.

20th. This forenoon studied. Afternoon reading. Just at night went down to Ahok's and made a change of lamp globes. This evening went to Tieng Ang Tong and listened to a sermon by Bro. Tang In Kang on the subject of living in conformity with the prayer which we so often repeat. Asking the Lord of the Harvest to send more laborers into his vineyard.

21st. Sunday Quarterly Meeting. Love Feast at 9 A.M. Not very interesting, at the close of which Bro. Maclay baptized 4 grown persons and 6 children. [76] Maclay preached the sermon on the "Being of God". The sacrament was postponed till afternoon at 2 o'clock. I made a few remarks on this occasion and read the service and distributed the Elements assisted by the other brethren. It was a season of much refreshing to me. The number who communed was just fifty.

This evening Bro. Gibson preached from the history of Nasman the Assyrian a very interesting sermon, at the close of which a collection of money was made for the assistance of a poor widow with four children at Que-Hung amounting to \$17.50, of which \$8.50 was Chinese.

22nd. Studied till about noon, then went to Tieng Ang Tong and attended upon the reading of some sermons written by Native Helpers. Afternoon at home. Bro. Frank [?] Cox of the Wesleyan Mission and stationed at Hankow came in with Bro. Maclay. He has been to Canton and is now on his way to Shanghai and Hankow.

23d. This morning a real snow storm. It came down quite thick and in large flakes like Sugar Snow, a thing unusual. The amount of snow that fell is said to exceed any amount [77] that has fallen for the last 15 or 20 years. The mountains were literally white.

Went into the city with Bro. Cox. Took him to the old British Consulate, to the Altar to Heaven + Earth, to Mr. Wolfe + my house, to Wolfe's chapel, to Hartwell's and to Ching Sing Tong. He left for the Anchorage today at 4 P.M.

This evening went to Po Ma Sang with Bros. Gibson and Baldwin. Went to see Mr. Doolittle who leaves on the morrow for America. It being prayer meeting night we went to that also. Mr. Baldwin had his little girl baptized. Mr. Doolittle performed the ceremony. Mr. Peet [?] led the meeting. It was a very good meeting. The Spirit of God moved all our hearts and we felt it good to be there. After meeting stayed some time at Doolittle's and chatted and then bade them good bye and came home and found Mrs. Gibson + Baldwin with Mary.

24th. Today writing for the home mail, finished three letters. Went down to Hedges with Mary about 4 o'clock P.M. Prayer Meeting this evening at Maclay's. Gibson led. Present all but my wife.

[78] **25th.** Today, walked into the city and packed up in boxes + barrels a good share of my effects in view of moving out next week. Took dinner with Bro. Wolfe who came home from Hong Kong a few days ago. He told me that he intends to be married before a great while to a young lady in Hong Kong. Showed me her Portrait. Did not learn her name. Got home about dark. Spent the evening after tea at Gibson's.

26th. Rainy. Teacher did not come. Reading and writing. Afternoon Lu Seu [?] came out to recite his lesson. Repeat without the Book the four first Chapters of Matthew.

27th. Today went to city and packed household traps [?]. Took dinner with Wolfe.

28th. Sunday. Preached at Ching Sing Tong in Chinese. Attended American Service in Afternoon. Maclay preached.

29th. Today in forenoon Mission Meeting, after which went over to house No 5 to see how it looks and what re-[79]pairs were necessary. Saw the Parson who has been living in the house the past year. His things nearly all removed. Gives the house into my charge tonight. Went into the city this afternoon to finish packing. Sent my coolie over to take charge of No 5. Sold two of my stock to cook for \$16. Mission Meeting again this evening to settle terms for church officers +c.

March 1864

1st. This morning before breakfast went to No. 5, found all the keys missing. The former watchman being present with his bedding, I retained the latter till he returns the keys as I judged him to be the responsible man. Sometime after he came back with 10 keys which I took and still kept the

bedding in hopes to get more keys. He has not yet come back with more. Men came today to see about repairing No. 5. No bargain struck. Two Officers from the American Ship of War "Wyoming" Mr. Wells Lieutenant and Mr. Cochrane Paymaster called with Mr. Vice Consul Clark. Gibson came in afterwards and stayed some time.

[80] **2nd.** Today our Consul and several of the leading officers of the "Wyoming" went in to see the Acting Governor General. The Chinese Authorities got wind they were coming and sent out the money early this morning on account of damages done to our property. \$4200.

The Consul demanded the arrest and punishment of the rioters which the Authorities agreed to do so but wanted time. I went this afternoon and opened Ching Sing Tong for public preaching. It was very cold and very few came in. There has been snow on the mountains all day.

This evening Prayer Meeting led by Bro. Maclay. Mail came in "Per Undine" just at night. Kin Taik and his wife have also arrived.

3d. Today, sick with a cold Did not leave the house. Lo Tiong came out to borrow two dollars promising to pay in two weeks from tomorrow. I lent him the \$2.

4th. Called workmen to repair No. 5. Cold some better though far from well. On the bed a good deal of the time.

5th. Today looking after the repairing of No. 5. It is strange that I am all the time building [81] or repairing or moving. Since I came to China I have certainly had no continuing city so far. [?]

10th. Today in forenoon busily occupied in repairing house No. 5 as I have been doing mostly the past few days. This afternoon went with Maclay + Gibson to my chapel on East St. Found the Chinese Authorities had repaired it so it was nearly as good as before though they had replaced no furniture except they have mended up the seats and pulpit. The people on the Street were very quiet, gave us no abuse. Several shops in front + nearby were closed up meaning [?] that the occupants were among the guilty and have fled for fear of arrest. Went up to call on Wolfe but found him absent. Called in to see Sister Tang a few minutes.

11th. This morning a Mission Meeting to hear the report of Committees on the riot. Reported the payment by the Chinese Authorities of our full demand of \$2800. Viz \$1000 Chapel damages, \$1200 Chinese losses and \$600 for my losses. Clark thus retains \$1200 for Government purposes or what he pleases \$4200 being the full amount paid by the Chinese to our Consul. Gibson + myself were continued on [82] the committee to settle with the Chinese brethren their share of the losses. This afternoon met Gibson to arrange for the above settlement. Today the Steamer "Cadiz" came in. A

letter from Mr. Doty to Gibson contains the news of the death of Miss Adriance on the 5th Inst. in great peace.

31st. Since the last date have been busy in making repairs on house No. 5 and in making out estimates with Bro. Maclay for New Chapel on east street in the city. Commenced moving yesterday.

Today Mission Meeting. Afternoon moved over to No. 5 where we are again keeping house. How long we shall remain here is a question. We do not expect this to be our permanent home.

April 4th. The Sites' came down today and stop [sic] with us. Are making arrangements to have tomorrow with Sites for the country to be gone two or three weeks.

5th. Left this morning at 9 A.M. in company with Bro. Sites for a tour in the country taking as helpers Bros. Lo Tang and Hieng Mi. I took two coolies to carry provisions + clothing for 180 cash per day.

[83] **23d.** As I kept no diary while in the country save in form of letters to Mrs. Martin I will here insert them instead for future reference.¹

¹ *Transcriber's Note: Five letters to Mary Martin are inserted here. They have been carefully glued in place in the diary so as to open and be read as pages in the book. The text of these letters follows.*

[Letter #1, p. 82-83]²Sai Ké April 5th 1864My Dear Mollie³:

As I forgot my diary I think I will write my diary on the sheets of paper I brought for writing letters to you and send them to you instead of the silly matter I might write had I the diary. If you have time and will copy for me into the diary leaving two pages blank for some things I want to write after I get home, you will greatly oblige me, yet if you do not have the time or feel like it you need not.

We are anchored tonight a few miles below Kang Chia after a tedious day against a swift current and for a good part of the way in a drenching rain. Nothing has occurred of much importance. Have relished the food my good wife prepared, and tonight have tried with satisfaction the sherry. Sites pronounces it decidedly good and beneficial for the whole body. I more than ever think it will be three weeks before we get back.

6th. Arose at 5 o'clock and got the boatmen started. A beautiful morning, water in the river fallen so there was less current to move against but strong west wind. After breakfast went ashore and and [sic] walked while the Boatmen pulled away at the boat. Passed through Kang Chia, halted + preached and left at 11 o'clock A.M. Came to Chang Kie and rested two hours waiting for the boats to come up. There were a good many people standing about and we told them about Jesus the world's savior. There also ate dinner. This place is just opposite the large village called Tuk Kie, the latter place being on the right bank of the river while the former is on the left bank. Left Chang Kie at 1/2 past 1 P.M. and came on to Tek Tong, halted, preached + distributed books. Came on and took the boat at 3 o'clock a short distance this side of Pak Sai. The south wind had sprung up and bid for to help us to nearly if not quite to Ming Chiang. The scenery to here was very much as it is nearer Fuh Chau. Off from Pak Sai on a hill saw a new fortification built by some wealthy families where they may fly for refuge in time of rebellion. Passed some dilapidated Buddhist Temples built in by gone days on the side of a high gently sloping hill. Night came on, the wind was strong, the river rough, so we gave up the idea of reaching Ming Chi[a]ng today. Came to a halt about 3 miles below Ming Chiang beside a large river boat. Went ashore here and went on foot a few hundred yards and put up a dirty hovel, a mere apology for a tavern. Sites did not want to stop on the boat the wind was so strong and the boat rocked so.

7th. Did not rest well the past night the flies were so thick, yet Sites slept right through only waking up on a dream when he almost jumped out of bed yelling, "Who has got my lantern"? How insipid this way of putting up at worse than pig pens but so we must do for many nights to come. Sites arose before I did and went to the boat to get some things of comfort and soon returned and hurried us off for Ming Chiang where we arrived about 7 o'clock A.M. Went up to the shop he had rented and stayed some time, then went into the city itself through the principal streets and part way on the wall. It is a wretched poor looking place, not any larger than the village at the upper bridge. We sent in our cards to the Magistrate and he returned us his. He was not out of bed at the time. Sites had + still has some trouble about renting. The Hiang Sing's

² *Transcriber's Note: The stationery used to write this and the subsequent letters is embossed with the word "Bath" surrounded by a small design. It is located in the upper left hand corner of the paper. The stationery is folded as a pamphlet, and the edges are somewhat irregular as if cut by a scissors.*

³ *Transcriber's Note: Rev Martin sometimes calls his wife "Mollie".*

C.R. Martin Diary, Volume 2 Part 4 Page 7

are making a row about it and the Man who rented wants to receive it back. I do not think there will be much trouble, however. We left Ming Chiang about 10 o'clock and after a tedious day of rowing + pulling + sailing and walking are safely anchored at Chui Kan. Passed this afternoon two house boats, Ashton's and Thos Smith's. They have been up here a few days for health and pleasure.

This far the Lord has been very gracious to us. We have faith that He will prosper us in all our journeyings and bring us back to you again in safety in due time of 2 1/2 or 3 weeks.

We shall write to you again from Ku Ching. You will receive the letter on next Tuesday or Wednesday if our calculations are right.

I trust you are having a good time with Mrs. Sites. Don't work too hard and do not worry about me. Kiss the children for me. Tell Eddie Papa wants he should be a good boy. Please tell Bro. Maclay to tell Tong Mi to go to So Nguong and stay there till I come. He should start so as to get there by next week Thursday. Please borrow a basket or take your white trunk and send us some Bread and pies. We have meat enough. Send also cake and some salt, and anything you think we will like. Send some "eye water".

[Transcriber's note: Here the page runs out. However, the letter has been turned sideways and, with writing at right angles right over the top of the above text, the letter continues:]

Sleepy and tired we now return hoping you as well as we will sleep well and alike arise refreshed in the morning to begin work for our Master.

Good night

Yours as ever

Carlos

[Letter #2, p. 84-85]

Po Ke (precious book) Apr. 8

My dearest wife,

Arose this morning at 1/2 past 5 o'clock after a night of good rest on the boat at Chui Kau. Sent off a letter to my family by the extra boat. Ate nothing but prepared with all the haste possible for a walk up into the mountains towards Ku Ching. It was 7 o'clock A.M. however before we could get our train under headway. We commenced ascending the hill as soon as we landed from the boat. The village of Chui Kan is situated on the side of a hill and reminds one a little of Hong-Kong. Stopped a few minutes at the tavern where our Chinese Helpers and coolies slept, then on we went straight up the hill by a paved road. Amid the bustle of preparing while at the boat, forgot to have prayers. So Bro. Sites + I turned aside into a byroad and knelt down in the midst of tall grass and implored God to be merciful to us this day. It was with some reluctance I lost [last ?; left?] sight of the noble Min, but the loss was partially made up by coming to a considerable stream which we have followed in its meandering course all day through one of the wildest, grandest, sublimest parts of creators wide domain where the foot of modern foreigners has never before trodden the soil if we may believe the people. At one place we were told foreigners had been on this route, but on further inquiry learned they were only Sew-Chew men. I have often thought of the people as Crusoe did of the "Beasts that roam over the plain." Men women and children alike have shown not the slightest fear or concern at our presence. They see us and do not seem to know who or what we are. They look and say nothing, offer no abuse. Wherever we have siopped for rest or refreshment we have been treated with great deference. At one place we crossed the stream referred to on a wooden, covered bridge built almost on the style of bridges in America. It was 330 ft in length. The butments were of stone and built in a most substantial manner. The roof was covered with tiles and the whole roof was supported by 140 posts. The bridge was 12 ft wide with plank floor and brick at the sides exposed to the weather. At 3 P.M. a shower of rain came on but we had luckily arrived at a place of shelter. So did not get wet. We started again but before we could get to another house our things got wet some. After the rain had slacked came on to this place where finding tolerable good quarters thought it best to put up for the night. It is a small place, only a few houses mostly [towers?; taverns?]. It is but a short distance from the Brook whose waters, swollen by the recent rains, roll and tumble over the rocks with a roar that would remind you of olden days in your native state. Such music I have not listened to for years and I am in ecstasies tonight. Bro Sites feels much at home and has been tinkering [with] wooden pegs to hang our things on while we remain. He took out his stockings and told me his wife knit them at the same time imprinting several affectionate kisses on them. We have travelled only 18 miles today. We have walked all the way and feel some tired. It is yet 12 miles to Ku Cheng. We shall easily go there tomorrow if all is well, from whence I will finish this letter and send to you so good night and blessings to you + the children.

Apr. 9th 15 minutes before 2 P.M. At Ku Cheng Kaing. We arrived here at about 12 o'clock today having passed the night pleasantly at Po Ké. We entered the city by the South gate followed by a great crowd of curious people. Since I have been in China I have never witnessed so much excitement. Men + women all classes young and old lined the road, stood in shops, some speechless, some strung up to the highest pitch of yelling to all their freinds to come and see the strangers. We first went to the Office of the District Magistrate, sent in our cards and Passports, and after a little while were invited

C.R. Martin Diary, Volume 2 Part 4 Page 9

in to see his honor. On account of the crowd we thought it best to go in and request him to provide us with good lodgings. We were received kindly and on making our request he proposed to provide three constables to lead us to a temple in the city where we should be provided with all the comforts usually afforded to strangers. We gave our assent + bowing left for the proper place the constables leading the way. After walking for some distance in the rain came to the temple and found it amply spacious for our purpose. The Magistrate had also directed the Te Pó of the ward to provide for us all we called for.

The road travelled today has been very much as it was yesterday, winding along by the side of the river swollen more than yesterday by the rains of last night. At one place came to some falls that were grand to look upon. Crossed another covered bridge smaller than yesterday across a branch of the large river called Chó Sang Kê. There is a large village nearby of this name.

Sat. Evening 1/2 past 7 o'clock. Hundreds of people have been to see us. The crowd was very trying, but it afforded a good opportunity for the Helpers to preach the gospel which they improved. We have been out in the street and traversed the city nearly over. There are three principal streets through which we passed and thousands of eyes were strained to get a good sight of us as we travelled along. At one place came to a stage where a theater had been held. Mounting this, Bro Sites preached on one side and I on the other. Meanwhile the Helpers had gone in different directions. Ku Cheng is a large city containing some 30 or 40 thousand people. We hope to do good here. Tonight all is quiet where we are and we hope to get a good night's rest. We think of staying here till Tuesday morning, then to Ping Nang, 2 day's travel, where we shall stay till Friday, then to Ning Tiak + spend the Sabbath + Monday.

[Transcriber's note: Here again Rev. Martin has run out of paper and, turning the letter sideways, has continued, overwriting the preceeding text with the following words:]

We hope to get to So Nguong a week from next Tuesday and so to Fuh-Chau by the following Friday or Saturday.

In the meantime pray for us that the word of the Lord may have per course and abound.

It seems a good while to be away from my family but it may be for the best.

Kiss my babes.

Kind regards to all.

Yours as ever,

Carlos

[Letter #3, p. 86-87]

Ku Cheng Apr.10th Evening.

My Dear Mary,

Another night and day have passed by + through the Mercy of God we are still alive and happy as could be expected. Last night was much refreshed; the quiet rest – the most quiet we have had since we left home. The only sounds that we heard were from the two watchmen furnished by the Magistrate beating the night watches in their frequent rounds. At five this morning before I was up sent you my second letter which I hope you will get by day after tomorrow night. Bro. Sites arose early and dressed and went off exploring the city by making the circuit of the wall which he accomplished in about three hours getting back at nine o'clock, having walked 4945 paces or 989 rods, equal to 3

C.R. Martin Diary, Volume 2 Part 4 Page 10

miles + 29 rods. While S- was taking his sabbath morning's walk I was taking a morning nap which I felt I needed and which did me good. Before I was dressed which was about 8 o'clock a crowd was collecting outside eager to see us and to hear our message and receive our books. After Breakfast and prayers we prepared to go out and preach. We selected for a preaching place a large front room connected with the temple where were arranged as many as fifty dumb idols. Here we preached in turn from 10 A.M. to 1/2 past twelve including a short time in which we sold books. After we were done here we went to the spacious area in front of the "Emperor's Temple" and mounting the stand for Theatrical performances where a table and chairs had been prepared for us published boldly the doctrine of the Bible. After which we sold a good many books. The people listened very attentively and in the main seemed pleased with what was said. While we were thus engaged some poor idolators were bowing before the senseless idols. Two or three policemen were with us to see that nothing indecorous should happen. We went from this place out into the street and walked up and down selling books and talking a word here + there for Jesus. We were invited by a respectable + venerable man to come into his shop and drink tea which we did + it gave a good opportunity to talk in a familiar way and I trust we gained some friendship. Got back to our lodgings at 1/2 past 3 P.M. tired, and resolved not to go out again tonight. A good many people came and the Helpers held forth for some time. Tonight all are in good spirits and hopeful for the rest of our trip. It has rained a good deal today, is raining and cold tonight.

11th. This morning arose after another night of quiet rest and after breakfast we went out to hunt up a shop or house to rent. Found the people very willing to rent and were invited to see many places. After a good deal of looking in different parts of the city found one at last which suited and determined to rent. After much bartering in which much time was consumed we fixed on the price \$16. renting for three years paying all down the first year, afterward \$8. the second month and \$8. the 8th month. There is a large room in front with high ceiling, which will make a fine preaching room. It is situated on Tuai Ke (Large Street) which is one of the most prominent streets in the city. There are seven smaller rooms for sleeping and cooking. It has rained a good share of the day and looks unfavorable for tomorrow. The people do not crowd to our stopping place as much as they did. They are getting more familiar. There do not appear to be many large footed women here. Have seen but one or two. No women in the streets, none on the road, none in the fields. The women are not very shy. They come to the doors in great numbers old + young, and we see many pretty faces and some not so pretty. Whether we shall leave tomorrow or not is uncertain.

12th. Still raining and we are still at Ku Cheng still [sic]. Have today taken formal possession of the rented chapel and have called a mason + carpenter to make repairs and furniture. This morning got the Te Po's signature to the papers made out and sent it in to the Magistrate with Sites' card. He sent it back after a little while with his card. Tonight dismissed our police and determined to go home the way we came and take fairer weather for So Nguong. What we may do tomorrow morning shall show our decision.

13th. This morning well and think of leaving for So Nguong if the weather will permit otherwise stay here and work as best we can for the Lord. The city is open to us apparently and there is much need of our continued labor here.

You must not worry about me. I shall be careful and keep well. We are perfectly safe in this city. Everybody is well disposed to us. We hope to [be] back in a week or less if providence permits. You will please tell the brethren we are having a good time. Ask them to pray for us. Good-by for the present, kisses for the children. Your Husband,

C R Martin

[Letter #4, p. 88-89]

Tuai Kuo Apr. 14th. 1864

My Dear Mollie,

Yesterday morning arose early and determined to leave Ku Cheng for So Nguong. Sent Tong Mi off to Fuh Chau with letters to you and some [?] money for the rent of the Chapel. We left So Nguong and Ing Kong to take care of the Chapel and to continue preaching the gospel. We left the temple at 1/2 past six and by seven were across the river by ferry boat paying 100 cash. Our course was due northeast by the side of a considerable stream. For some distance the road was across a level field now covered mostly with wheat just in the blow. After a distance of about 2 miles to the foot of a hill which we commenced climbing and kept climbing and climbing with now and then slight descent till 2 1/2 o'clock P.M. when we gained the highest summit and began to descend in earnest. We could not get chairs on the whole route and then only at a price we would not pay. At five P.M. we arrived at a place 24 miles from Ku-Cheng and being very weary put up for the night at a very good inn. The name of the place was Su Tong. Yesterday was the most tiresome day of the trip, the hardest day's work I have done for a long time, but a good night's rest and less travel today has brought me up again. The country passed through yesterday was mountainous in the extreme, and ever diversified in scenery. Sugar loaf hills, deep + awful gulfs, beautiful cascades, forests of large trees and mountain flowers met the view ever and anon. I wished you could see what we observed and yet was glad you were more comfortably off. Most of the day was drizzly wet. Sometimes we were enveloped in the clouds and much of the time we were above clouds. This morning started about 7 o'clock and came on to a place called Se Tong. Here we found a large village of some thousands of people, and after we had refreshed ourselves with food spent about two hours in preaching and distributing books + tracts. Here we got two chairs to bring us to So Nguong for \$7. Nine miles this side of Se Tong came to a place of some 15 or 20 thousand souls called Sang Tong. Here our coolies ate dinner while we improved the opportunity to preach Jesus. The people invited us to stay over night and tell them more of this doctrine and to come again. We preached here an hour and a half and came on to the place from I date this letter. We have a nice (?) snug little room for the night. While I now write the rain is pouring down in torrents indicating bad roads if not a bad day tomorrow. We have been from home ten days. The goodness of God is very great and we shall now pray to him and go to bed thinking of our wives and children far away yet we hope in health. Good night.

So Nguong 16th April 2 o'clock P.M. Arrived here at noon today. Last night after a tedious day stopped at a place called Tak Suok [Tak Suoh?], having travelled 27 miles. The country passed through was hilly but less diversified. The name of some of the places passed through were as follows, Tuai Hak, Chiang Ti, I Tong. The latter place is a large place of several thousands of people. How we wished we had time and money to stay here + labor a while. Where we stayed last night was only 9 miles from Ning Taik. We should have gone there but for the want of funds. I lent Bro. Sites several dollars to finish his concerns at Ku Cheng + I have only three dollars left in my pocket to live on here a day or two until we [?] get back to Fuh-Chau. On inquiring, learn Tong Mi has been here and has gone to Ning Taik.

Sunday Morning Apr 17th.

My Dear Mary I send you this sheet this morning so that we may get some money. There is a good prospect of renting a chapel had we the funds. As it is we have not enough to live on here today + tomorrow and get home. So we will stay on and rent awhile and labor till you can get us \$25 or \$30.

We are well and think we had better improve the present opportunity as I shall not get here again during the hot weather.

If the coolie is quick in four days we shall get the money. Perhaps you had better ask Bro Maclay to send the money by a responsible man. Neng Sing would be a good person to send. He need not bring anything else. I would write more but have not time. Keep up good courage. I will come in the Lord's time. Herewith an order on Maclay for \$30 dollars which please send. Kiss my babes. God bless you, goodby,

Your Carlos

[Letter #5, p. 90-91]

So Nguong April 17th, 1864

My Dear Mary:

Early this morning I sent off a coolie with a letter to you which I hope you will get by tomorrow night. Ate a hearty breakfast of rice, eggs, pork and potatoes and chinese cakes. I suppose you sent some things for us to eat by Tong Mi but he has taken it all to Ning Taik. I suppose he will be back here by tomorrow and how good some Christian victuals will taste. Today have been out on the street in five different places and preached Jesus to large and attentive crowds. There does seem to be an open door here and I can but hope souls will speedily believe with salvation. Tonight sat in front of the inn door and sung in Chinese "Forever with the Lord" to the great delight of the spectators. Praise the Lord for all his mercies. May his grace keep you in perfect peace.

18th. Today have been trying to rent a house or shop for a chapel. Have had one offered to us but find it is by far too small. There is evidently an under current of influence against us and I have some fears no suitable place can be rented without trouble. We have been to some large houses and have seen many of the fairer sex. First we went and called on the Catholic Priest who has been in the city a few days. He is a Spaniard, an old man fifty years of age and has been here upwards of 20 years. He lives some six miles away at a place called Song Kau [?]. He seemed much pleased to meet us. He showed us their place of worship where were the usual images. This evening Tong Mi and Neng Sing came from Ning Taik bringing us something to eat and some letters from our dear wives. Tong Mi has had a good time and is in good spirits tonight.

19th. Today have been preaching, selling books and trying to rent, were somewhat successful in the two former but not at all in the latter. Tonight fulsome discouragement, yet I believe in God that not many years will elapse before there will be a people here whose God is the Lord. Good has already been done here. I can see a great change since two years ago I first came here. This evening the landlord came up and we had a long talk with him and invited him to stay to prayers, which he did. He seems to be favorably impressed. I hope he may be converted.

20th. Today have further tried to get a chapel with some prospect of success, yet there is much uncertainty about it. Tiong Mi came tonight bringing 30

dollars and some letters from our dear wives. The friends in Fuhchau are all well.

21st. Arose at 4 o'clock after a night of disturbed rest and prepared to leave for Fuh Chau. Left Tong Mi and Ning Seng with \$20, hoping they may finish renting the house fixed upon yesterday. At six o'clock was outside the West Gate. The rain was pouring down the while in fury, but it soon stopped and cleared off and the sun came out bright + hot. We passed Pak Tak at 7, Ngo Hing [?] at 8. Took breakfast at Siong Leu just calling at Ing Taik. At Tong Song by 12, and at Tai Che by four in a heavy rain and conclude[d] to put up for the night having come 24 miles. We are well and hope tomorrow night to be with our dear wives + children whom we shall not have seen for 18 long + tedious days. Home sweet home will be appreciated more than ever, while we shall hope that our absence from home may redound in the end to the salvation of many hundreds of precious souls.

22nd. Arose early this morning and got under way at 1/2 past six o'clock. Walked half a Priv and got a chair to the city of Fuh Chau for 1000 cash the distance being nearly 25 miles. For a large part of the way I was ahead of the rest of the company, my coolies walking very fast. Bro Sites did not get a chair till he got to Tong Siang and did not overtake me till some time in the afternoon. We arrive at the city at about 4 P.M. Went to East Street to see how the mason + carpenter were getting along with my chapel + parsonage. At the South Gate got chairs for Cheng Seng Sang where we arrived about 5 P.M. and found our wives + children dressed to receive us all in health + good spirits. This evening Bros Maclay + Gibson called to see us. How Thankful we are to the Father of all mercies that we are safely back again without the loss of a hair, having no colds and ready to continue work for God whenever he calls us.

[End of 5th Letter]

[92] **Apr. 23d.** Today have been busy in settling accounts and getting matters straight in general. The Sites' will remain over the Sabbath. They take tea at Gibson's tonight or go over after tea and spend the evening.

24th. Sunday went to Ching Sing Tong. Bro Sites went along with me. Ing Quang preached. At the class meeting learned that one of my members is in jail. Having interfered in a row on the street occasioned by a theft of opium + money So Huong himself was accused of the robbery, arrested, and lodged in jail where he awaits his trial. Urged by his wife and the brethren I went into the office of the magistrate + requested that he might have more time given him for his defense and obtained three days of grace. Did not get back to the American Service it being most dark. The Sites take tea at Maclay's.

25th. The Sites left for home today. Gibson also goes to Tong Ping Hu. The American Consul Mr. Black and Mr. Cunningham go with him. Baldwin's took tea with us + spent eve.

26th. Today at home, till towards night when the Baldwins went with us to the new store and made various purchases.

[93] **27th.** Today Sister Huong came over early and made an urgent request for me to go to [the] magistrate again and plead for a continuation of time for her husband to prepare for his trial. After consulting with Maclay I consented to go in after dinner which I did, but as there was no prospect of his trial coming on today or tonight So Huong did not care to have me speak for him so did not go in. Saw Bro. Huong. He says he is sorrowful, but is in hopes to be able to make good his defense and secure an early release. Went to East Street to see how the chapel + parsonage are getting on. Led prayer meeting tonight.

28th. At home. Afternoon Bro Lu Sen came over to recite his lessons. Had a talk with him in regard to the relation of his mother's sisters to So Tiong [So Huong?].

Sent coolie over for Tong Mi to come over tomorrow to settle accounts +c.

29th. Tong Mi came before we were done breakfast. Settled up travelling accounts. Talked + advised with him on certain matters relative to So Tiong's [So Huong's?] family matters.

30th. Bro. Sites came in while we were at breakfast. Mission meeting at 1/2 past 9 o'clock. [94] Bro. Sites took dinner with us and left for Ngu Kang at 1 o'clock P.M. Afternoon settled up some of my accounts with servants.

May 1st. This morning preached in Chinese at Ting Ang Tong. Afternoon went to the Chinese Sabbath-School. At 5 P.M. preach – at the American Service. A very good congregation. The Blauvelts from Amoy were present. This evening Mary is sick with a Headache.

2nd. Mary well this morning. This forenoon went into the city to East Street to look after my chapel.

This afternoon attended monthly concert at Ting Ang Tong. Bro. Baldwin led. Rec'd a letter from Bro Sites saying his little girl has the Whooping cough some.

14th. Tonight Dr Stewart came to board with us for the present. He is from Scotland; was sent out to Peking as a medical missionary but owing to some misunderstanding the Board which sent him out refused to accept his bills, so he has re-[95]signed and proposes to establish himself in professional business at this port.

21. Today went to Tieng Song. After a tedious time climbing and descending hills got there at for [sic] or five o'clock P.M. This is my first visit at this place. There are two members of our church living here and there is a class of ten inquirers. I have rented a small house for a chapel and school-house. Have started a day-school with eight scholars. I was received kindly and hospitably

by the people. Stayed at the house of Sie Sing Lü[^]ng's as there are no sleeping accomodations at the chapel.

22. Service today at the chapel. Tong Mi preached. A good attendance of the vilagers [sic]. Afternoon a general prayer meeting at Sing Lü[^]ng's. Was quite well pleased with the inquirers generally.

23. Left Tieng Song early this morning and arrived house at 1/2 past 3 P.M. The sun was hot and as I was in an open chair a severe headache was induced.

[96] **June 11th.** Today went to Tieng Song where I arrived sometime before night set in. In the Evening all of the Inquirers came together at Sing Lü[^]ng's house, where I stopped, and I examined them preparatory to baptism. Was very tired and went to bed early.

20th. Today service at Sing Lü[^]ng's house. Tong Mi preached and then I baptised 5 men + 3 women. Afterwards baptised 2 children and administered the Lord's Supper to 12 communicants. A goodly number of people were present merely as spectators but no one disturbed us. Afternoon went down to the School and had an examination. A great many people came in and filled up the room and stood about the door and quietly + interestedly listened to the recitations. Some of the boys did well + specially one or two very small boys. One larger boy evidently studies under the disadvantage of carrying a younger brother snoring on his back. I think the School is doing a good work. O that it may be the means of bringing the children to Jesus while they are yet children. This evening a prayer meeting. All the brethren out. I hope by the grace of God this class of young Christians will be kept by the power of God through unto Salvation.

[97] **21st.** Came home today notwithstanding it was rainy most of the time. On arriving at the South Gate of the city found the water very high and rising rapidly. Arrived home at 5 P.M. + found my family very [well] except Lucius with some diarrhea. Gibson + Maclay called this evening.

[Here ends the text of Carlos Martin's diary, Volume 2.]

